



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

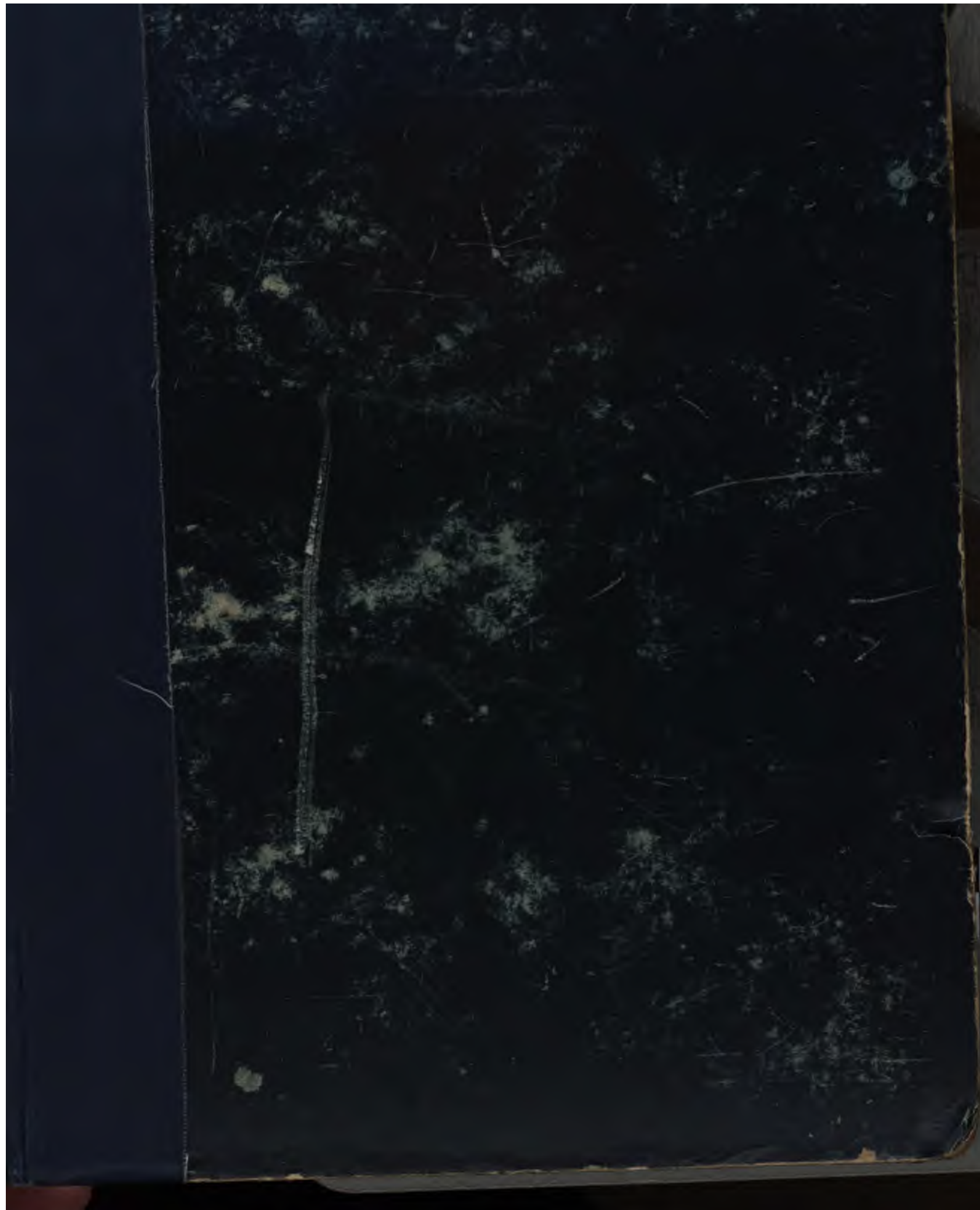
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



*Libby 107*

*IXX c.3*

*from the library of*



*Margery Bailey*

*Department of English, 1914-1956*

*Professor Emeritus, 1956-1963*

*a gift of her heirs*

STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES

To Messrs Henderson Esq

and Co. Capt. from  
the Publisher;

*Edinburgh, March 6, 1810.*

THE FOLLOWING

**NEW WORKS**

WILL SPEEDILY BE PUBLISHED, BY

**ARCHIBALD CONSTABLE & CO. EDINBURGH,**

AND

**CONSTABLE, HUNTER, PARK, & HUNTER, LONDON.**

---

**XIV. MEMOIRS** of the Most Remarkable Passages in the Life of **SIR JAMES TURNER, KNIGHT**, from the Commencement of his Military career in Germany, in 1632, (the year in which Gustavus Adolphus was killed), till his Trial for Oppression and Extortion, and Acquittal, before the Privy-Council, in 1668; written by Himself. Published from the Original Manuscript in the possession of the Publishers. One Volume Octavo; *with a Portrait of the Author.*

\* \* The Author of this Narrative served as a Major in Lord Sinclair's Regiment, during the Rebellion which broke out in Ireland in 1641; and afterwards in the Scottish army in England, till he was made prisoner, with the Duke Hamilton, by Lambert, at Uxeter. Obtaining his liberty in 1649, he withdrew to the Continent, where he remained in Denmark, Germany, Holland, and France, till the Restoration. In 1666, he was surprised at Dumfries by the Covenanters, with whom he continued a prisoner till their defeat by Dalryell, at Pontland Hills. His Memoirs, embracing so eventful a period in the History of Europe, are peculiarly interesting, from the light which they throw on many of the most remarkable events and characters of the time. He also wrote, and published in 1683, "*Pallas Armata*," a series of Military Essays; was a man of considerable talents, much experience, extensive reading, and shrewd discernment; and his writing in the first person gives to his Memoirs, as he has managed it, a dramatic effect, by which the Reader is made not only a Spectator, but also an Auditor of all that passes.

---

Printed by George Ramsay & Co.  
Edinburgh, 1810.







The English & Dutch, which kept out well enough, till we storm'd a trench they had at the foot of the hill, whereby they command'd the strip of water, that we did take. In the assault fortie of them were put to the sword, we left five or six, with fix'd Mafur. After this, Inexorable Christ made them desire a parley; I was order'd to speak with them, we, then told the Lt General we mov'd to grant any other condition, then that they sent goods on Discretion, or money. And I found strange to me to hear the Lt Generald mis-differen, that they sent goods themselves to the Kingdome of Marry, and not to him. At length they did so, and after they were come out of the Castle, they were sent to the sword, above Method sent me, except our young man Mackonll, as he said. I beg'd to be sent to France with a hundred country fellows, whom we had smock'd out of a caw, as they do for Xos. We were given to Captains Camble, the Chancellors Brother.

**MEMOIRS**  
**OF HIS OWN LIFE AND TIMES**

**BY SIR JAMES TURNER.**

1632 - 1670  
**M.DC.XXXII.—M.DC.LXX.**

---

**FROM THE ORIGINAL MANUSCRIPT.**

---

**PRINTED AT EDINBURGH:**

1829  
**M.DCCC XXIX.**

KCB

# IV

## APPENDIX.

### I. BISHOP GUTHRY'S OBSERVATIONS OF THE LATE REBELLION OBSERVED, . . . . . P. 229

### II. LETTERS TO SIR JAMES TURNER.

1. From William Duke of Hamilton, 22 Nov. 1672,	. . . . .	247
2. From Dr Gilbert Burnet, 1 May [1673]	. . . . .	248
3. From Dr Burnet, 18 Aug. [1673]	. . . . .	248
4. From R. Hamilton of Dickmont, .... [1673]	. . . . .	249
5. From Dr Burnet, 22 Aug. 1673,	. . . . .	250
6. From the Duke of Hamilton, 28 Aug. 1673,	. . . . .	251
7. From Dr Burnet, 22 Nov. [1673]	. . . . .	252
8. From the Duke of Hamilton, .. ...	. . . . .	253
9. From the Duke of Hamilton, 22 Sept. [1675]	. . . . .	254
10. From the Duke of Hamilton, 13 Nov. 1675,	. . . . .	255
11. From the Duke of Hamilton, 19 Mar. 1677,	. . . . .	255
12. From the Duke of Hamilton, 11 Apr. [1677]	. . . . .	256
13. From the Duke of Hamilton, 23 May [1677]	. . . . .	257
14. " Discourse with the Archbishop of Glasgow, the 28 of May, 1677," by Sir James Turner, . . . . .	. . . . .	257
15. From the Duke of Hamilton, 1 Jun. [1677]	. . . . .	262
16. From the Duke of Hamilton, 16 Jun. [1677]	. . . . .	262
17. From the Duke of Hamilton, 10 Sept. [1677]	. . . . .	263
18. From the Duke of Hamilton, 26 Oct. [1677]	. . . . .	264
19. From the Duke of Hamilton, 2 Jan. 1678,	. . . . .	264
20. From Anne Duchess of Hamilton, 19 April, 1678,	. . . . .	265
21. From the Duchess of Hamilton, 22 Apr. [1678]	. . . . .	267
22. From the Duchess of Hamilton, 30 Apr. 1678,	. . . . .	268
23. From the Duchess of Hamilton, .. ...	. . . . .	269

V

24. From the Duchess of Hamilton, 20 May 1678,	. .	270
25. From the Duchess of Hamilton, 17 Jun. 1678,	. .	270
26. From the Duchess of Hamilton, 19 Jun. [1678]	. .	271
27. From the Duchess of Hamilton, 20 Jun. 1678,	. .	271
28. From Sir James Turner to a Person unknown,	. .	272
29. From the Duchess of Hamilton, 4 Nov. 1678,	. .	276
30. From Andrew Toftes, 10 Feb. 1679,	. .	276
31. From the Duke of Hamilton, 4 Mar. [1679]	. .	277
32. From Andrew Toftes, 4 Mar. 1679,	. .	278
33. From the Duke of Hamilton, 5 Feb. [1680]	. .	278
34. From the Lord Ross, 14 Jan. 1682,	. .	279
35. From the Lord Ross, 22 Jan. 1682,	. .	279
36. From the Lord Ross, 26 Jan. 1682,	. .	280
37. From the Lord Ross, 10 Feb. 1682,	. .	281
38. From the Lord Ross, 16 Feb. 1682,	. .	282
39. From the Lord Ross, 6 Mar. 1682,	. .	283
40. From the Lord Ross, 8 Mar. 1682,	. .	284
41. From the Lord Ross, 11 Mar. 1682,	. .	284
42. From James Earl of Arran, 21 Mar. 1682,	. .	285
43. From the Earl of Arran, 22 Mar. 1682,	. .	285
44. From the Lord Ross, 25 Mar. 1682,	. .	286
45. From the Earl of Arran, 27 Mar. 1682,	. .	287
46. From the Earl of Arran, 28 Mar. 1682,	. .	288
47. From the Earl of Arran, 29 Mar. 1682,	. .	289
48. From the Earl of Arran, . . . . .	. .	290
49. From Sir Thomas Levingston, 11 Apr. [1682,]	. .	291
50. From Sir Thomas Levingston, . . . . .	. .	292
51. From the Lord Ross, 13 Apr. 1682,	. .	292
52. From the Lord Ross, 15 Apr. 1682,	. .	293
53. From the Earl of Arran, 19 Apr. 1682,	. .	294
54. From Sir James Turner to the Earl of Arran, 21 Apr. 1682,	. .	294

# VI

55. From William Master of Ross, Apr. 25, [1682]	.	296
56. From the Earl of Arran, May 4, [1682]	. .	296
57. From the Earl of Arran, May 6, 1682,	.	297
58. From the Lord Sempill, May 6, 1682,	. .	298
59. From the Earl of Arran, May 11, 1682,	.	299
60. From the Earl of Arran, May 19, 1682,	. .	299
61. From the Earl of Arran, . . . . .	.	300

## PRELIMINARY NOTICE.

---

THE work here given, under the title of **MEMOIRS OF SIR JAMES TURNER**, has been extracted from a volume of Discourses on various subjects of Philosophy and Literature, in the hand-writing of the author, compiled at different periods of his life ; and with the different portions of which he has connected a history of himself, down to the date of the manuscript in the year 1670. The relation of these biographical portions of the volume to its other contents, will best appear from a short analysis of the whole, which is subjoined to this Preface ; and on the part of the Editor it may be enough to add, that no liberty of the slightest kind has been taken with the author's composition, beyond that of separating these historical parts from the larger mass, and arranging them as a continuous narrative.

The hand-writing of Sir James Turner is sufficiently well known to place the genuineness of this manuscript beyond the possibility of a doubt ; and of its fate subsequently to the author's death, some slight

## VIII

notices have been preserved. He was survived by his wife, to whose worth so many affectionate tributes are paid in these Memoirs ; and after his death, Lady Turner resided in the family of Lieutenant Richard Turnbull, of the Scots Dragoons, (whose wife was probably her near relation,) first in the neighbourhood of Glasgow, afterwards in the Island of Arran, at the White House of Lamash, where she died, as is supposed, about the year 1716. To Mr and Mrs Turnbull, she is reported to have left a considerable sum of money, and other valuable property ; and, in particular, there can be no doubt that they retained the possession of Sir James Turner's manuscripts.

These papers did not escape the notice and inquiries of the indefatigable Mr Robert Wodrow ; and, in the valuable collection of his Correspondence, lately purchased by the Curators of the Advocates' Library, there are several letters on the subject, addressed to him by the Rev. James Boes, minister of Campbeltown. On the 8th of July, 1723, Mr Boes writes,—“ I have caus'd enquiry at Mr Turnbull anent Sir James Turner's Memoirs, and find he has them; but is not willing to part with them, being, as he says, pre-ingadg'd to the D. of Hamilton not to part with them till he see them. I shall deall with the Arran ministers to use their interest with him for a sight of them, under what security he shall demand ; and if so, ye shall have an account of them one way or other.” Again, on the 4th of February, 1724, Mr Boes reports to his correspondent as follows :—“ I desired Mr Stuart, [minister of Kilbride,] in Arran, to procure a copy of Sir

Ja. Turner's manuscript, and particularly intreated him, which he promised to do. The person Turnbull who has it, tho otherwise a discreet man, yet is at the heart strongly prelatical, and a Jacobite, as is his wife. However, if it can be procured, doubt not of its being sent to you." These attempts had proved unsuccessful ; and, in answer to a letter from Mr Wodrow, March 2, 1724, " praying the continuance of his endeavours to get a loan of Sir James Turner's papers from Mr Turnbull, if he would not part with them," Mr Boes writes, on 3d of November, 1724,—“ I have done all I could, both here and in Arran, to procure that manuscript of Sir Ja. Turner, but without successe. Mr Turnbull is dead, and his relict, who is but ill affected to our interest, refuses to part with it, saying, she knows not where it is. However, if I can possibly procure it, ye shall have at least a copy, tho' I'm told by such as perused it, that it contains but a narrative of what he did there, with his orders, and reflections on what he calls the stiff humor, and obstinat refractory temper of the people oppressed and persecuted by him, which was all he had to say in his own justification.”

After Mrs Turnbull's death, her effects passed into the possession of her nephew, William Wilson, a person of respectability in the island of Arran, who probably allowed the papers, so eagerly sought after by Wodrow, to remain undisturbed and uncared for. At the sale of his furniture, after his death in 1767, a strong box of nice and curious construction happened to attract the attention of Mr John Stuart, son of

the Rev. Gershom Stuart, minister of Kilbride, and grandson of the Rev. James Stewart, mentioned in Wodrow's Correspondence, then a youth of thirteen years old, and afterwards his father's successor. His importunities prevailed on his mother to purchase this box ; and on examining it, young Stuart discovered the manuscript in question, together with a considerable number of letters addressed to Sir James Turner; all of which, though perfectly legible, had suffered great injury from damp. When he afterwards went to College at Glasgow, he carried this manuscript with him, and placed it in the hands of Robert and Andrew Foulis, the celebrated printers of that University, with permission to print such parts of it as they might think fit. This, however, was declined, and the manuscript remained in the possession of Mr Stuart till about twenty years ago, when it was brought into notice by the publication of a few extracts in a provincial newspaper. It passed afterwards into the hands of a bookseller at Greenock, from whom, it is believed, it was purchased about ten years ago, by the late Mr Archibald Constable, whose intention it certainly was to have published the historical portions of the volume. The manuscript is now the property of David Constable, Esq. advocate ; and with his permission the present edition of these Memoirs has been prepared.

To the Memoirs are here added, in an Appendix, the Letters addressed to Sir James Turner, found in his strong-box or cabinet ; which, although not perhaps of very deep historical importance, throw some

scattered lights on the course of his life for several years after his removal from military employment, and will be found to exhibit some amiable contrasts to those darker impressions of his character, which have been too deeply, and, it is to be feared, too justly stamped on the contemporary history of his age, ever to be effaced.

At every period of his life, Sir James Turner appears to have been much addicted to literary composition. Besides his printed works, of which "*Pallas Armata*,—Essays on the Art of War," is the most considerable, he left various manuscripts; but among these, little of any value as a fit addition to this historical work has been found, excepting a few remarks on Bishop Guthry's Memoirs. These are valuable, as the testimony, in most instances, of an eye-witness, and have been, accordingly, introduced into the Appendix to this volume, printed from the original manuscript in the Advocates' Library.

In the same Library there is preserved a copy of another work, entitled "Buchanan Revis'd; or, Animadversions on the Historie of Scotland, and a Dialogue *De Jure Regni apud Scotos*, both write "by Mr George Buchanan." This work is in its nature controversial, and intended to counteract the anti-monarchical principles of the writings which he undertakes to criticise; but in the Introduction, Sir James Turner has given some few additional notices of himself, which it has been thought worth while to quote in the Appendix.



## APPENDIX.

---

### I. ANALYSIS OF THE CONTENTS OF THE MANUSCRIPT FROM WHICH SIR JAMES TURNER'S MEMOIRS HAVE BEEN EXTRACTED.

- P. 1. "*The Introduction to these Discourses, wherein are contained the most remarkable Passages of my Life, till my releasment out of Prison at Hull, in the Year 1649.*"
- P. 68. The following ESSAYS or DISCOURSES, are of—(1) DUTIES OF SOVERAIGNS AND SUBJECTS.—(2) THE SUPREME POUER IN ALL REPUBLICKS.—(3) MONARCHIE.—(4) ARISTOCRACIE.—(5) DEMOCRACIE.—(6) ORATORS AND PREACHERS.—(7) MAGICKS.—(8) THE JEWS CABALE.—(9) FRIENDSHIP.—(10) EXTERNALL EVILLS AND MISFORTUNES.—(11) IMPRISONMENT.—(12) ANGER.—(13) REVENGE.—(14) DUELLS.—(15) CRUELTY.
- P. 192. A Letter from Don Francisco of Quevedo to Philander of Sitmald, who wrote the Continuation of Quevedos Visions. Concerning some Discourses which passed in the Infernall Court betweene the late Vsurper Oliver Cromwell, the late Chancellor of Sweden, Axell Oxesterne, and the Lord Wilienstrome. Sent by the Post of Hell. In yeare 1659. Englished out of the Hie Dutche.
- P. 230. A Defence of some Ceremonies of the English Liturgie—to wit :  
Bowling at the name of Jesus.  
The frequent repetition of the Lord's Prayer, and good Lord deliver us.  
Of the Doxologie.  
Of Surplesses, Rotchets, and Canonick Coats.
- P. 271. "*A full Narration of the Insurrection in Scotland towards the latter end of the Yeare 1666, and of my Misfortunes following thereupon.*"

#### XIV

P. 272. "*In the Introduction are contained the remarkable Passages of my Life, from my releasment out of Prison at Hull, in 8<sup>th</sup> 1649 till 9<sup>th</sup> 1663. The rest are narrated in the Narration till the Yeare of God 1670.*"

P. 308. *The Narration.*

P. 387. The Concometancie of Joy and Griefe. (*in versæ.*)

P. 389. Two Heroicall Epistles, supposed to haue beene writ by Mahomet the Great and Irene, the faire Greeke.

Composed before I was ane and twentie yeares of age.

P. 403. End of the two Epistles.

P. 404. Ane Elegie on the Death of the Earle of Lothian. Designed by William Douglas of Tofts

"The Argument.—It wants but a few yeares of halfe ane age since the Earle of Lothian's death made a great noyse in the world: The strange manner of it furnishing matter of strange discourses to people of all rankes and qualities. He was a person of a great spirit, endued with excellent parts. He had seene the most renowned places of Europe. Naturally curious he was, which perhaps made him studie Astrologie. He made choyce of William Douglas of Tofts to be his freend, his confident, and his *alter ego*. This was a gentleman of a good spirit, generous, and learned in *omni scibili*, especially in the Mathematickes, wherein he had attained to so great a perfection, that he had no equal in his owne countrey, perhaps few in Christendome. As intimate as he was with the Earle, it is cleare enough, by his owne complaints, that he was not entrusted with the secret of his death. He either finish'd, or intended to finish, the composition of ane Elegie on this sad subject. In the yeare 1662, I fortund to be in the Mers, wher I gave a visite to Archbald Douglas of Lumsden, brother to this Tofts, where he shew me this peece, pitifullie torne, mutilated, defective in most places, and writ with a very bad orthographie. He and I having long befor contracted a strict enough friendship in Germanie, he prayed me to look on it, and to take a litle paines to reduce it to some good order, at least to make it intelligible,

for the memory of his noble brother who design'd it. And certainly the original wanted his last hand to it, or that copie which his brother gave me was exceidinglie imperfite. I tooke it with me to Edinburgh; foure days I spent before I could get it red, and foure more before I could vnderstand or guesse at the scope of it. At length I put it in that garbe in which it is now to be seene, and sent it to my friend."

P. 429. MISCELLANIES written at several times for DIVERTISEMENT.—THE PREFACE.  
—FRANCESCO PETRARCHA.—EDWARD THE THIRD, KING OF ENGLAND.  
—PHILIP THE SECOND, KING OF SPAIN.—LUCRETIA ROMANA.—LUCRETIA BORGIA.—LUCRETIA MARINELLA.—ORLANDO.—ENHARD and IMA, [i. e. EGINHARD and EMMA.].—JULIUS SCALIGER.—MARY STEUART, QUEEN OF SCOTS.—RAYMUNDUS LULLUS.—THE STRANGE EVENT OF A DISPUTE IN RELIGION.—CARDINAL MAZARINE.—THE KING'S EVILL.—WALLENSTEIN, DUKE OF FRIEDLAND.—GEORGE VILLIERS, DUKE OF BUCKINGHAME.—MARY TOUTHER, QUEENE OF ENGLAND.—CHARLES GUSTAVE, KING OF SWEDEN.—CHRISTINA, QUEENE OF SWEDEN.

END.

II. EXTRACT FROM THE INTRODUCTION TO "BUCHANAN  
REVISED," &c.

---

"I BEGAN to write these papers which follow, in the year of God 1643, in Ireland, but made no great progresse in them, being otherwayes imployed there, and afterwards in Scotland and England: Bot fyve years after that, being prisoner in Hull, in England, from September 1648, till November 1649, I had leasure and opportunitie enough to write; and such was the civilitie of Colonell Overtoun, then governour of that towne, that he permitted the stationers to furnish me with any books I call'd for, the peruseall whereof I had at an easie rate per week; nor did he hinder me to write any thing my fancie led me to; and when I had gott my libertie mostly procur'd by him, he suffered not any of my papers to be search'd, though in severalls of them I had write my opinions very freely of the King's murther, and that of James Duke of Hamilton, and of the change of monarchy in a pretended commonwealth. There it was that I finish'd all I intended to say of Buchanans writeings; but my papers were all taken and destroyed by the Cromuelians, in the year 1651, when Dundee was taken, sack'd, and plundered by Generall Monck, who liv'd to doe more acceptable service to God and his Prince, and all the three kingdomes. I had car'd the lesse for the destruction of these papers, if I had not lost better moveables; bless'd be God for his mercy in saving my wife from being kill'd by these furious plunderers. Four years after that, in the year 1655, I found myself in good enough leasure in Bremen, a towne in Germanie, to resume my former labour, which encouraged me to write over most of what I had said before on that subject; and in the year 1659, I finish'd them at the Hagg, in Holland. All these papers lay by me almost in loose sheets, till the year 1669, a year after I had laid down my commissions, and then I had leisure more then enough to write them over in mundo; and indeid they have lyen ever since in parcells by me, till in this year 1679, I was mov'd by a very accidentall emergencie, to cause bind them together in one book, as now you see them."

**MEMOIRS OF SIR JAMES TURNER;**

**PART FIRST,**

**WHEREIN ARE CONTAINED**

**THE MOST REMARKABLE PASSAGES OF HIS LIFE**

**TILL HIS RELEASEMENT OUT OF PRISON**

**AT HULL IN THE YEAR 1649.**



## SIR JAMES TURNER'S MEMOIRS.

---

I WAS not seventeene yeares old when I left the schooles, where haveing lightlie passed thorough that course of philosophie which is ordinarlie taught in the universities of Scotland, I was commanded by my father and grandfather to commence Master of Arts at Glasgow, much against my will, as never intending to make use of that title which undeservedlie was bestowed upon me, as it was on many others before me, and hath beene on too many since. I stayd a yeare after with my father at Dalkeith, applying myselfe to the studie of humane letters and historie, in bothe which I allways tooke delight. I did reade also the controversies of religion betweene us and the Roman Catholickes, (for the Presbyterians at that time made litle or no noyse,) wherby I might be enabled to discern the truth of the Protestant perswasion and the fallacies of the Popish one or any other, that so I might not, in traversing the world, be carried away with everie wind of doctrine. Bot before I attained to the eighteenth yeare of my age, a restless desire enterd my mind, to be, if not an actor, at least a spectator of these warrs which at that time made so much noyse over all the world, and were managd against the Roman Emperour and the

Catholicke League in Germanie, under the auspicious conduct of the thrice famous Gustavus Adolphus, King of Sueden. Sir James Lumfdaine was then levieing a regiment for that service; with him, (my neereft freinds consenting to it,) I engaged to go over enfigney to his brother Robert Lumfdaine, eldest captaine; who since that time was a generall major, and tuo days before the king was routed at Worcefter, was killed at Dundee, (where he was governour,) in cold blood, ane houre after he had got quarter.

It was about Lambes of the yeare 1632, that we came before El-fennure in Denmark, where we stayd three days, and thereafter landed at Rostock in the Dutchie of Mecklenburg; from whence we marched to the Archbifhoprick of Bremen, where, whether with the change of aire or dyet, or by eating too much fruit, (wherof I faw that countrey abound more than my ounes,) or all three, I fell grievouslie sicke. My fever keepd me fixe weeks, and by that time I was able to walke abroad, we were sent to reduce some obftinate countries to order, and force them to submit to the Suedish yoake. This provd a hard and severe winter to me and all of us, who knew not before what it was not to have tuo or three meals aday, and goe to bed at a feasonable houre at night.

The King of Suedens victories had carried him fo far up in Germanie, that we never came to see him. At the time of our arriveall, his fortune beganne to decline; for at Nuremberg, trusting to that prodigious successe which had attended all his former undertakeings, he stormed a well fortified campe entrenched on a hill, in which were tuo armies; the Imperiall under Wallenstein, and that of the League under the Elector of Bavaria. As this was a rash, fo it proved an unfor-

tunate .....; for beaten he was with the losse of neere foure thousand killed on the place, among whom were many brave ..... and gentlemen. Neere fixe thousand wounded, so that all the hospitalls and lazarettos of Nuremberg were sufficientlie filld. Nixt November, this magnanimous king, endeavouring to save the Duke of Saxe his lands from the same Wallenstein, losd his life at the battel of Lutßen, which notwithstanding was wonne by the conduct and valour of Bernard Duke of Weimar. In Februaire 1633, a strong and veterane armie of the Sueds came to the Lower Germanie, under the command of George Duke of Brunfwick and Luneburg as generall, and Dodo Baron of Knipphaufen as felt marshall, with which joynd Lumf-dains Scots regiment, and one English one under the same Colonell Afhton who was killed at Tradaff or Drogheda in Ireland, where he was governor, where all were put to the suord by Cromwell in the yeare 1649.

With this armie I had a lamentable cold, wet and rainie march, till we layd siege to the strong toune of Hammelln, which held out, with the destruction of multitudes of our men, till the 28th of June, and till the two earles Merod and Grünfield, both Imperiall generalls, came with an armie of 20,000 men to relieve it. We broke up, and met them foure English miles from thence, and fought them. This was a battell wherin so much blood was shed, as was enough to flesh such novices as I was. We gaind the victorie, which was a great one to be gaind with so little losse on our side. Neere nine thousand of the Imperialists were killd in the place, three thousand taken, with eighteene canon, and above eightie standards and collors. The toune yeelded thereafter on articles. After this battell, I saw a great many killd in cold blood

by the Finns, who professe to give no quarter. The whole time of this siege, my best entertainment was bread and water, abundance of the last, but not so of the first ; but this proceeded from want of money, for the leager was plentiful enough. The rest of this summer, nixt harvest and nixt winter, I was at the sieges of severall towns and castles, and at many brushes, encounters and . . . . . ; and all the time sufferd exceeding great want of both meate and clothes, being necessitated to ly constantly in the fields with little or no shelter, to march allways a foot, and drinke water ; so that then I could verifie that which I had so often heard at schoole, *Dulce bellum inexpertis*. And indeed I was so hardend with fatigue, that thogh at first I longd to be backe at Scotland, yet being so well inurd to toile, I fullie resolved to goe on in that course of life of which I had made choyce, and I thought then I could have livd all my days on a very spare dyet, and without a bed too ; so true it is that *Habitus est altera natura*.

In the beginning of the yeare 1634, our English and Scotch regiments, such as they were, came to be quartered at that Oldendorpe neere to which the battell was fought. I was lodged in a widows house, whose daughter, a young widow, had been married to a ritt-master of the Emperors. She was very handsome, wittie and discreet ; of her, thogh my former toyle might have banished all love thoughts out of my mind, I became perfittie enamoured. Heere we stayd fixe weeks, in which time she taught me the Hie Dutch, to reade and write it, which before I could not learne bot very rudlie from fojors. Haveing then the countrey language, I learnd also the fashions and customes of the Germane officers ; and about this time was both regiments reduced to two companies ; two captaine lieutenants, and two ensigneys, (wherof

I was one,) onlie ordaind to stand; all the rest casheerd, and in great necessitie and povertie. The tuo companies were bot badlie used, tossed to and fro, in constant danger of ane enemie, and without pay. Bot I had learnd so much cunning, and became so vigilant to lay hold on opportunities, that I wanted for nothing, horses, clothes, meate, nor moneys; and made so good use of what I had learned, that the whole time I servd in Germanie, I sufferd no such miserie as I had done the first yeare and a halfe that I came to it.

It was in this yeare that the Emperors Generalissimo Wallenstein, intending to betray his master, familie and armie, [was put to] death by Gordon and Leslie at Egar in Bohemia, by the way of fact, *per viam facti*, as they call it, because by the way of right, or *de jure*, he was so strong as he could not be proceeded against. The actors were well rewarded by the Emperour, especiallie Leslie. Ferdinand the Second. entrusts the conduct of his forces to his sonne the King of Hungarie, who, with the help of the Cardinall Infant, brother to the King of Spaine, gave a total defeate to tuo Suedish armies, under the command of Bernard Duke of Weimar and the Suedish field-marshal Gustave Horne. Sixe thousand or therby, wherof our tuo companies made up some part, were on our march to Nordling, where the battell was fought, to have reinforced the Sueds; and were within a few leagues of Frankford du Mein when we heard of the rout, and so were countermanded to Westphalia. By this one blow the Sueds loofd more ground then they had gaine in a yeare before; and nixt yeare most of the Dutch princes made their peace with the Emperor.

Towards the latter end of this yeare, my fathers death calld me to Scotland to give my mother a visite, where I was forced to stay longer

then I intended; for the frost continued that winter univerfallie through Europe till the midft of March 1635. In the fummer I returned, and being informed at my landing at Bremen, that fome officers intended to goe from Hamburg to Perfia, I refolv'd to make one of that number, and upon that account went thither; where I found many of my countrey-men; fome Englifh and fome Germans, great with child of that expedition, wherein they promisd themselves more gold then the philofophers ftone can afford the alchymifts. The matter was this. The Duke of Holftain Gottorff intended to fet up a trade with Perfia, for filks to be tranfported from Hircania thorough the Cafpian fea, and then up the great river Volga, from thence to Riga, then to Holftain. The Sophi of Perfia was contented ane embaffador fould be fent to treat with him concerning the traffique, bot that the embaffador fould bring with him as many officers as poffiblie he could, to traine the Perfian foot, wherein he was farre inferior to the Turke. A number of us were to goe as members of the embaffadors houfhold and traine, becaufe the Great Duke of Musco, being at peace with the Grand Seigneur, wold not fuffer us to goe otherwife; bot the Ruffe hearing the defigne, wrote to the Duke that he wold not fuffer his envoy to paffe with fuch followers. After I had fpent fome of my moneys at Hamburg, and got a promife of the directors of that expedition, that roome fould be keepd for me if the voyage went on, I went to Osnaburg, where my colonell Sir James Lumfdaine was governour. The Perfian expedition was bloune up by the perfidie of the Dukes embaffador, who reveald the whole plot to the Turke; for which he had his head ftrucke of at his return from Perfia, having defervd a more ignominious death. At my arrival at Lumfdaines garrifon, I found my place was difpofed to ane other, which

I lookd upon as no fair play, being done contrare to promife. I was forced to ftay there. Sir James goeing away, and the Imperialifts prevaileing everie where, Osnaburg is blockd up by the Marques of Grana. This blocquado was coufine germah to a feege ; in the time wherof I came againe in employment.

Nixt fummer the Sueds prevaile ; old Leslie is made our fieldmarshall, (Knipphaufen being kild,) and King his lieutenant generall ; they beate away the Marques, who befiegd us in Osnaburg, joyns with the Landtgrave of Heffen, and with joynt forces beates Lamboy and some other of the Emperors generalls, who had befiegd the strong toune of Hanaw two yeares, and put frefh provision in it. Heere was Sir James Ramfay governour. After this Leslie joynes with Banier, and both of them fought with the Duke of Saxe, and ane Imperiall armie at Woodstocke, where they gaind a compleate victorie.

In the yeare 1637, I went with fome commanded men, with Lieutenant Generall King, into the land of Heffen, to affift the Landgrave to beate fome Imperiall regiments out of his territories, who indeed were makeing havocke of all among his poore fubjects. Upon our approach they retird ; bot thogh we were tuo to one againft them at leaft, and that Bigod, who commanded them, made a ftand at Eshvegen, yet did we retire in great hafte, thogh in good enough order, back to Caffels the Landgraves refidence and capitall citie, and left the poor countrey to the mercy of ane enraged enemy, who had order by fire and fword to force the Landgrave to accept of the peace of Prague. Neither did Bigod fpare to burn three faire townes, Eshvegen, Olendorpe and Vitenhaufen before our eyes. A mournfull fight it was, to fee the whole people folow us, and climbe the tuo hie rockes which flanked us. Old

and young left their houses, by the losse of them and their goods to save their lives. Aged men and women, many above fourscore, most lame or blind, supported by their sonnes, daughters and grandchildren, who themselves carried their little ones on their backs, was a ruthfull object of pitie to any tender hearted Christian, and did show us with what dreadfull countenance that bloodie monster of warre can appear in the world. Neither did our feare, (which often masks itself with reason of state, as then it did,) permit us to make any stay at Cassels, but pou'd us with some haste to Westphalia. As we pass'd by a little town called Brokle, where lay an Imperiall garrison, a great many of them had fallied out, lind the hedges and annoyd the Heffich, who that day had the vant; which when King saw, he commanded this Sir Edward Bret and me, with each of us fiftie musketeers, to beate them in; which we did, with a great losse to them, and of three or four of our owne men. Therafter finding no enemy in the field to oppose us, the Landgrave and King besieged the little but indeed strong town of Vecht, in which was Luterlam, the Elector of Collens lieutenant generall. This siege we plyd so brisklie, that within eight days it yeelded on articles. From thence we runne to the siege of Furstanaw, which, when we had invested, the Landgrave, by the tolleration, perhaps advice, of the estates of Holland, broke up with his armie and marched into East Freezland, where nixt winter he dyed. Bot his armie, under the command of Lieutenant Generall Melander, quarterd there two yeares at least; wher they made themselves so strong, that therewith the brave Princeesse Emilia, Landgraves, in the minoritie of her pupill sonne, of whom she was Regent, did these feates in opposition to the Emperor Ferdinand the Third, as hath made herselfe famous to the world, and much

enlargd the territories of that protestant prince. After this separation, Lieutenant Generall King was forced to breake vp the siege, and put his litle armie in guarriſon. Nixt yeare he joynd at Statlone, in the biſhoprick of Munſter, with Prince Palatine, and beſeegd Lemgo; but the ſudden approach of Count Hatſfeld with ane Imperiall armie obligd them to get them gone; bot was overtaken by him neere Vlotho, and there rather ſhamfullie routed then overthroune, where Prince Rupert and the Lord Craven were taken, with many brave gentlemen more. Nixt ſpring I fell grievouſlie ſicke of a tertian, which keepd me full ſeventeene weekes.

It is not my purpoſe to relate all the great actions were done in Germanie during my aboade there, that being the ſubject of ane other ſtorie; or yet of all the occurrences befell myſelfe, that wold be tedious; and therefore I ſhall ſay, that haveing paſſd thorough the ſeverall charges of enſigney, lieutenant, captaine lieutenant, and captaine, after I had recovered of my ague, being diſcontented with my colonell, one Plettemberg a Courlander, for impoſeing too hard conditions of recruits on me, I tooke my leave of that ſervice in the frontiers of Franconia, and went ſtraight to Scotland, to look for ſome employment under the Prince Elector, who as I heard, by order of parliament, was to levie ten thouſand men in that kingdome. Being arrivd I found indeed a parliament fitting in the yeare 1639, where E. Traquair was commiſſioner; but no word of levies for Germanie, but verie great rumours of civile warrs. I ſtayd bot one fortnight there. At my return to Germanie nixt winter, I engagd to raiſe a companie of Germans vnder one Colonell Burgſdorff; who paſt then vnder the reputation of a brave and honeſt cavalier; bot I found he was more obliged to report than he

deserved ; for he cheated me shamefullie by giveing up his capitulation, laying the blame on Felt marshall Banier having strengthened his regiment with five and forty men which I had levied on my owne charges, which could cost me no lesse than foure hundreth dollars ; so many leviers there were for severall interests, and so knavish the fojors.

This abuse obligd me to goe to Sueden, to complaine to these who were Administrators during the minoritie of Queene Christina. I went in companie with Sir James Lumfdaine, whose regiment I had left foure yeares before, and Colonell David Lesley, since Lord Neuuarke. We shipd at Lubeck, and after a fortnights toyle at sea, we landed at Stokholme the capitall citie of that kingdome ; much beautified since with these sumptuous and magnificent palaces which the Suedish generalls have built, as monuments of these riches they acquired in the long German warre. There I saw one of the fairest castles, and of the greatest reception, of anie I ever lookd on, all coverd with copper, of which mettall that kingdome abounds. It stands on a prettie ascending hill from the sea ; and under it, for most part, rides the navie royall, composd of great and tall ships, carrying some 50, some 60, some 70, and some eightie brasse guns. The Queene was then about fourteene yeares old, applying herselfe much to learne forreine languages, and to the studie of these sciences, which by the strength of her . . . naturall endowments she soone acquired, which has made her so famous all the world over. Her mother, a beautifull and vertuous princeesse, at this same time when I was at Stokholme, stole away out of Sueden, being necessitated so to doe by the rude entertainment given her by the five Administrators ; bot within a few yeares brought backe with honor by her daughter, after she had tane the reines of the government in her

oune hands. Her coufine german, the Palsgrave Charles Gustav, since that time king, and famous enough for the short time of his raigne, was just then returned from his travells in Italie, France, England and Germanie.

I petitiond the Councill, and made my particular application to the renowned Chancellor Oxenstern, who, as he had with admirable prudence and successe mannagd the warre in Germanie after the king his masters death, with the title of Director of the Evangelicke League and Plenipotentiarie Legat for Sueden, so I found that in Sueden itselfe, he governed all affaires of state both forreine and domestick. After fixe weeks staye, they offerd me a letter to Field marshall Banier, to cognosce on the difference betueene Burgsdorff and me. But knowing well enough to what litle purpose I should make so expensive and dangerous a journey to find out Banier, who in pursueance of his good fortune had enterd Bohemia, I desired my passe, which was granted me, and with it as much money as I suppose I had spent at that Court. Haveing signified my desire to goe to Gottenberg, and there to ship for Scotland, they gave me the Queens passe for free horses, meate and drink by the way; a custome much in use then, and very grievous to the poore countrey men, since justlie abrogated by a law.

I did well perceave the Administrators encouragd all my countreymen to goe home, old Generall Leslie being then to enter England with ane armie; and there is no doubt but that rebellion, whereof he was heade, was fomented by both Sueden and France; the late king in the yeare 1630, haveing made peace with Spaine, so much to the prejudice of the ambitious designs of these tuo crownes. I was no lesse then a fortnight in travelling to Gottenberg, thogh in August 1640; yet it is bot

fiftie Suedifh leagues, each wherof we can compute to be no leffe then fixe Englifh miles at leaft. At my arriveall there, I underftood there were tuo fhips lying at Millstrand in Norway, three Suedifh miles from Gottenberg, one ane Englifhman bound for Hull, ane other a Dane bound for Leith.

I had fwallowed without chewing, in Germanie, a very dangerous maxime, which militarie men there too much follow; which was, that fo we ferve our mafter honneftlie, it is no matter what mafter we ferve; fo, without examination of the juftice of the quarrell, or regard of my duetie to either prince or countrey, I refolved to goe with that fhip I firft rencounterd. After tuo days neceffare ftay at Gottenberg, I hired a boat and went away in the evening; we rowed all night, and having paid tuo Suedifh caftles, about breake of day we came neere Millstrand. Underftanding the wind blew faire for both fhips, I was advifd to ftep out, and goe a foot ftraight thorough the toun to the fhoare, it being the neerer cut, whill the boate went a greater way about with my fervant and coffer. I did fo, and came juft there as the Englifhman was hoyfeing his failes. I afkd him if he wold give me paffage to Hull, (a place I have fince beene too well acquainted with,) who told me he wold with all his heart, provided I wold prefentlie ftep in. I befecched him to ftay till my fervant and coffer came, without whom I could not goe; bot no intreatie or prayer could prevaile with the inexorable fkipper, for away he flew from me, as ane arrow from a bow. This onlie hinderd me to prefent my endeavors to ferve the King againft the Covenanters. I calld instantlie for the Dane who was bound for Scotland, refolving to ferve either the one or the other without any reluctance of mind; fo deeplie was that bafe maxime rooted in

my heart. The people pointed with their fingers to the ship, which had got a great way out from the shoare, and stayd there for a passenger whom the skipper had promised to carry to Edinburgh. He was an old man, who at taking his farewell of his friends the night before, had drunke so much that he had sleepd his time. Immediatlie I clapt in fresh men in my boate, the others being overwearied with rowing, and so came to the ship; neither did the skipper make any scruple to reslave me, though at first he conceived his old man was in my companie. To the neglect of this old man, nixt to all ruling providence, may I attribute my goeing at that time to Scotland. On the fixth day after my embarkeing, we saw ourselvs not farre from Aberdeene. I was glad we were so farre north, because I had heard the kings ships were in the firth; bot I was mistaken, for they were gone; and no matter they had been gone sooner, for any good service they did the king there. The skipper fet me ashore at a place called the Cove, from thence I hired horfes to Edinburgh. This was in the month of September; and Generall Leslie haveing marchd into England, with a numerous armie at the Lambes before, and put my Lord Conway with some of the kings forces to a shamefull retreat at Newburne, had made himself master of Newcastle, and all the Bishopricks of Durham. I found this succeſſe had elevated the minds of my countrey-men in generall to such a height of vanitie, that most of them thought, and many said, they shoud quicklie make a full conquest of England; bot time hath shoune them since that they made their reckoning without their host, for the very contrare fell out.

After a short stay at Edinburgh, I rode straight to Newcastle, where I found all offices and charges of the armie filld up except one, which

was the majors place of my Lord Kirkkubrights regiment, which consisted of the men of Galloway, a place and a people fatal to me. The Earle of Rothes, father to this lord chancellor, professing very great kindnes to me, easilie perswaded the generall to bestow that charge on me; who otherwise bore me bot little good will, for some differences had beene betueene his brother and me in Germanie, where I accusd him of eleven points of treason; bot the controversie betueene him and me was decided by a canon bullet, which tooke away his heade. In that charge I continued ten months in England, a cessation of armes being everie month renewed betueene the Royalists and Covenanters.

The blacke Parliament of England having stricke of Straffords loyall heade, imprisond the Archbishop of Canterburrie, and frighted all the statemen and courtiers who might oppose them beyond seas, they got the king to passe the bill for trienniall parliaments, and ane other for the present one to sit as long as it pleased. They had no more use for the Scots armie, and therefore after haveing given a brotherlie present of three hundreth thousand pounds sterline, (a very kind and loveing compliment,) they sent them home to their oune countrey richer, I suppose, then when they came out of it. All this while I did not take the Nationall Covenant, not because I refused to doe it, for I wold have made no bones to take, sweare and signe it, and observe it too; for I had then a principle, haveing not yet studied a better one, that I wrongd not my conscience in doing any thing I was commanded to doe by these whom I served. Bot the truth is, it was never offerd to me; everie one thinking it was impossible I could get into any charge, unles I had taken the Covenant either in Scotland or England.

The king, in his passing to Scotland, had viewd the Scots armie as

it lay quarterd in the Bifhoprick and Northumberland. When we came home all were difbanded, except three regiments which had not at all beene in England. One was under Major Generall Monro, the fecond under Colonell Cochran, both which were quarterd neere Edinburgh. The third, confifting of fixe companies of Orkney and Cathnes men, was under my Lord Sinclar, and lay at Aberdeene. The Parliament of Scotland wold needs fit before the king came, for fuch was their pleafure; and when he came, it did what it pleased; my lord Argile, at that time created Marques, carrying all before him. He got a creature of his oune, and of his oune name, to be chanclor, to the difparagement of a farre honefter man, the Earle of Morton, Argiles oune father in law and benefactor. Heere the king gave way to his parliament to difpofe of all offices of ftate, and of his forts, caftles and militia, all of them undoubted prerogatives of the Croune. Ane act of oblivion wold not ferve this parliament, for their takeing armes againft the king; it muft be ane act of juftification, which paffd with the kings confent. Prefbiterian government is heere eftablifhed, and Epifcopacie abrogated by law; the king out of his goodnes granting all they defired, thinking thereby to gaine them; and indeed it was his conftant fate and practice to impouer his enemies to doe him more and more mifchiefe. This he felt before tuo yeares went about; and even then he might have feene their wickednes, when they wounded his honor irreparablie, by makeing the people beleeve he intended either to put Marques Hamilton and Argile aboard one of his fhips, and fend them prifoners to England, or to affaffinate them in his palace of Halyroodhoufe; which horrible calumnie thefe tuo lords feconded, by their counterfeit flight out of Edinburgh to Kinneil.

In the latter end of October 1641, came the lamentable news of the execrable rebellion of Ireland, in which so many thousands of innocent Protestants, both Scots and English, men and women, young and old, were put to cruell deaths by the barbarous and savage Irish. The parliament of England sent over present succours; that of Scotland offers ten regiments of foot, each consisting of one thousand men, to maintaine the Protestant interest in Ireland, bot to be entertained by England. The proffer is accepted, and old Leslie, newly created Earl of Leven, for his successfull rebellion against the king, is appointed to be generall of these 10,000 men, against the rebels in Ireland, who (had they not shed so much blood,) did no more against his majestie, then Leven himselfe had done.

Monro and Cochran are ordained in the spring to goe over to Craigfergus with their regiments; the first hath a commission to be governour of the towne and castle of Craigfergus, and major generall of the ten regiments; the second is cashiered for offering to be loyall. My Lord Sinclars fixe companies are reduced to foure, and they ordered to go over with Monro, till my lord raised fixe more to make up his regiment compleate. The other seven regiments were to be transported so soone as they were levied. A litle before the report of the rebellion came to Scotland, my Lord Sinclars major dyed, whose place my lord was pleased to bestow on me; a favour (in regard he had then choyce of a hundreth more sufficient) I can never either remember or mention bot with much thankfullnes. His brother was his lieutenant colonell, with whom I stayd at Aberdeene some part of that winter, and towards the spring marchd southwards. I found Generall Leven dissatisfied with my Lord Sinclars election of me, pretending his consent should have

been fought; but if it had, I am sure it had never been got, for that Excellence of his was constantlie my very heavie friend. We came to the west countrie in 1642, and lay at Irwine, Aire, and Kilmar-nock more than a fortnight, waiteing for a faire wind; which making a show to offer itselſe, Monro embarked at the Largs, Home (who had got Cochrans regiment) at Aire, and we at Irwine. When we were at ſea the wind turnd contrarie, and ſo all of us met at Lamlaſh, a ſecure bay on the coaſt of the Ile of Arran, where we lay a fortnight, if I remember right; and then the wind againe offering to be favorable, one of the kings ſhips which was with us ſhooting a warning peece, all weighd anchor, hoyſd ſaile in ane evening, and nixt day were in Craigfergus loch, and landed that night. The Engliſh forces that were there, under the Lords Conway and Chiceſter, marchd to Bellfaſt, leaving Craigfergus free for us. Theſe tuo regiments, with thoſe of the tuo Vicounts of Clandeboy and Aird, and the tuo Colonell Steuarts further north, with ſome few others which afterwards were called, for diſtinction, the Britiſh forces, had preſervd all that tract of Ulſter which is neereſt the ſea from deſtruction; for the wild Iriſh did not onlie maſſacre all whom they could overmaſter, but burnt townes, villages, caſtles, churches, and all habitable houſes, endeavouring to reduce, as farre as their power could reach, all to a confuſed chaos.

After we had refreshed a little, Major Generall Monro left ſeven or eight hundreth men in Craigfergus, and went to the field with the reſt, among whom was my lieutenant colonell and I; my Lord Conway went along alſo with neere two thouſand Engliſh. In the woods of Kilwarning we rencountered ſome hundreths of the rebells, who after a ſhort diſpute fled. Theſe who were taken got bot bad quarter, being

all shot dead. This was too much used by both English and Scots all along in that warre ; a thing inhumane and disfavouable, for the cruelty of one enemy cannot excuse the inhumanitie of another. And heerin also their revenge overmasterd their discretion, which should have taught them to save the lives of these they tooke, that the rebels might doe the like to their prisoners. Then we marchd straight to the Neurie, where the Irish had easilie seized on his Majesties castle, wherein they found abundance of amunition, which gave them confidence to proclaime their rebellion. The fortification of the towne being bot begunne, it came immediatelie in our hands ; bot the rebels that were in the castle keepd it two days, and then deliverd it up upon a very ill made accord, or a very ill kept one ; for the next day most of them, with many merchands and tradesmen of the towne, who had not beene in the castle, were carried to the bridge and butcherd to death, some by shooting, some by hanging, and some by drowning, without any legall processe ; and I was verilie informed afterwards, that severall innocent people suffered. Monro did not at all excuse himselfe from having acceffion to that carnage, nor could he purge himselfe of it ; thogh my Lord Conway, as Marshall of Ireland, was the principall actor. Our fojors (who sometimes are cruell, for no other reason bot because mans wicked nature leads him to be so, as I have shoune in my Discourse of Crueltie) seeing such pranks playd by authoritie at the bridge, thought they might doe as much any where els ; and so ranne upon a hundreth and fiftie women or thereby, who had got together in a place below the bridge, whom they resolvd to massacre by killing and drowning ; which villanie the sea seemd to favour, it being then flood. Just at that time was I speaking with Monro, bot seeing a fare off what a

game these godles rogues intended to play, I got a horseback and galloped to them with my pistoll in my hand; but before I got at them they had dispatched about a dozen; the rest I saved.

This execution had not the success which Conway and Monro had promised themselves; for instead of terrifying the rebels from their wonted cruelties, it enraged them, and occasioned the murdering of some hundreds of prisoners whom they had in their power. Sir Phelim O'Neale, the ringleader of the rebellion, hearing of the loss of the Neurie, in a beastly fury burnt the town of Armagh, where he then was, and as much of the Cathedral as fire could prevail over, and then retired himself to the woods and bogs. This gentleman was not the plotter of this rebellion; that was done by men of soberer heads and deeper judgments; but he was the grand instrument, and appeared first in arms, most treacherously pretending his Majesty's commission for what he did, (whereof the rebels in England and Scotland made good use.) He had counterfeited a warrant under the king's hand, and to the false parchment annexed his Majesty's great seal, which was hanging at his great charter, as he confessed afterwards to many persons of quality yet alive, and left it on record at his death; to which he was deservedly put, by hanging and drawing and quartering, at Dublin, by rebels as wicked as himself, but upon another account; for it was Cromwell's party that executed him.

My Lord Conway and Monro plundered the Neurie, except a very few houses; most of the men that were left alive, Conway forced to carry arms under his own regiment. This being done, Monro orders the town and castle to be garrisoned by my Lord Sinclair's regiment, whereof only two hundred were there with the lieutenant colonel

and myfelfe. We complaind, as we had good reaſon, to be left in a place which our owne people had made deſtitute of all things, bot in vaine. My lieutenant colonell ſtayd at the Neurie, haveing got two hundreth commanded men added to his owne, till I ſould bring up from Craigfergus as many of the regiment as were comd from Scotland. Accordingly I went thither with the armie; we tooke our march thorough the woodes and mountaines of Morne, where ſeverall rebells were killd, and many cows taken. I do remember that there we ſufferd one of the moſt ſtormie and tempeſtuous nights for haile, raine, cold, and exceſſive wind, (thogh it was in the beginning of May) that ever I yet ſaw. All the tents were in a trice bloune over. It was not poſſible for any matche to keepe fire, or any ſojor to handle his muſket, or yet to ſtand; yea ſeveralls of them dyed that night of meere cold. So that if the rebells, wherof there were 500 not farre from us, had offerd to beate up our quarters with ſuch weapons as they had, which were halfe pikes, ſuords and daggers, which they call ſkeens, they wold undoubtedlie have had a cheap market of us. Our ſojors, and ſome of our officers too, (who ſuppoſe that no thing that is more then ordinarie can be the product of nature,) attributed this hurrikan to the devilish ſkill of ſome Iriſh witches; and if that was true, then I am ſure their maſter gave us good prooffe that he was reallie prince of the aire.

I found about 500 of my Lord Sinclars regiment latelie arrivd at Craigfergus; theſe I ſhipd, and haveing obtained ſome wheate from the Major Generall, bot verie ſparinglie, and ſome leade, wherof we had none at the Neurie, I went aboard; and the wind being faire, nixt morning I caſt anchor at Carlingford, where I found that man of warre who

had convoyd us out of Scotland. In the afternoone, I marchd in to the Neurie ; pitifull quarters we had, and when the rest of the regiment came over, which that summer they did, we found we had not houses for the halfe of them ; for we were necessitated to take down a great many houses, to make the circumference of our walls the lesse. Our own preservation taught us to worke almost day and night, till we had finishd the irregular fortification begunne by the rebels. This great fatigue and toile, a very spare dyet, lying on the ground, litle sleepe, constant watching, Sir Phelemy being for most part allways within a days march of us, all these, I say, added to the change of the aire, made most or rather indeed all our officers and sojors fall seike of Irish agues, fluxes, and other diseases, of which very many dyed. These who recoverd, being inured to hardship and well traind, became excellent sojors and good firemen.

Monro made two more cavalcads that summer, in one wherof my lieutenant colonell was with him with 300 men ; in the second, myfelfe with the like number. In neither of them did he any memorable action, the rebels not dareing to face him, which made him conceive, because they did not then, that thereafter they neither could nor would. This opinion put him in danger nixt yeare, and four years after occasioned his totall overthrow at Blackwater. In one of these cavalcads, he layd siege to Charlemont, a strong castle, bot broke up a litle too soone, even when there was hopes of a surrender.

About Lambes in this yeare, 1642, came Generall Leven over to Ireland, and with him the Earle of Eglinton, who had one of these ten regiments, my Lord Sinclair, and Hamilton generall of the artillerie, better known by the name of *Deare Sandie*. Great matters were ex-

pected from so famous a captain as Leven was, but he did not anfuere expectation. One cavalcad he made, in which I joynd with him with 300 men, in which I could not see what he intended, or what he proposd to himselfe. Sure I am he returnd to Craigfergus without doing any thing. And the same game he playd over againe at his second march, except that he visited the Neurie; for which we were but little obligd to him, being forc'd thereby to part with our hay, wine, beere, and breade, of which we were not very well stord. In this yeare beganne that fatall warre betweene the King and his rebellious Parliament, by which, among other bad effects, we fingered no pay the whole time I stayd in Ireland, except for three monthis.

The officers of this our Scots armie in Ireland finding themselves ill payd, and which was worse, not knowing in the time of the civill warre who should be their paymasters, and reflecting on the successfull issue of the Nationall Covenant of Scotland, bethought themselves of makeing one also; but they were wise enough to give it ane other name, and therefore christened it a Mutual Assurance; wherby upon the matter they made themselves independent of any except these who wold be their actuall and reall paymasters, with whom, for any thing I know, they met not the whole time of the warre. The Generall was very dissatisfied with this bond of union, as he had reason; and at first spoke his language of striking heads off; but the officers sticking close one to another, made these threats evanish in smoake. And indeed it is like, ane active generall (who could have added policie to courage, and divided them,) might have made their union appear in its owne collors, which were even these of blacke mutinie. But the Earle of Leven, not being able to overmaster it, got himselfe ane errand to go to Scotland,

and so gave an everlasting adieu to Ireland. The most remarkable thing he did in the time of his stay was, that he tooke 2500lb. sterline to himselfe, which the Parliament of England had sent to the officers of his armie for wagon money. And trulie this Earle, who lived till he past fourscore, was of so good a memorie, that he was never knowne to forget himselfe, nay not in his extreame age. I can not say more of his deportments in Ireland then what my Lord Viscount Moore (who was killd next yeare) said to two of my friends, and it was this ; That the Earle of Levens actions made not such a noyse in the world as these of Generall Lesley.

My Lord Sinclare stayd with his regiment in great scarcitie at the Neurie, till the next yeare 1643, and then fell dangerouslie sicke ; being recoverd, he returnd to Scotland. In the time of his stay, we fingerd bot litle moneys, and meale so sparinglie as seldome we could allow our sojors above a pound a day ; for this reason, whenever we had intelligence where the rebells were with their cows, either my Lieutenant Colonell or I fought them out, with a partie of three or four hundred foot and some horse, in most of which litle expeditions we were successful, bringing in store of cows, with the flesh and milke wherof we much refreshed the decayed bodies and fainting spirits of not onlie our sojors, bot of many of our officers also. Some losse of men sometimes we sufferd, bot seldome ; many prisoners we tooke, on whom, if we did not set them at libertie, we bestowed some maintenance, bot made them worke at our fortifications. Not one officer or sojor escaped sickenes, except the Lieutenant Colonell. About Januare 1643, I fell grievouslie sicke of ane Irish ague, which brought me to deaths doore, bot it pleased God I recoverd.

In May, if I remember right, of the yeare 1643, Monro tooke the field with 1800 foot and tuo or three troops of horſe. When he came to Kirriotter, ſeven miles from the Neurie, he wrote to my Lord Sinclair to ſend him 300 muſketeers, and either his brother or me with them. Bot before this time, Owen Oneale, (who had beene Governor of Arras for the King of Spaine, and defended it gallantlie till he got honorable articles,) was comd to Ireland, and declared generall for Ulſter, as Preſton, (who had keepd out Gennep houſe againſt the Prince of Orange) was for Munſter. Oneale haveing brought ſome armes amunition and officers from the Spaniſh Netherlands, had in a ſhort time reduced many of the natives to a more civill deportment, and to a prettie good underſtanding of militarie diſcipline, and at that time was not farre off with a conſiderable part of ane armie. That night Monros meſſage came to the Neurie, by my Lord Sinclars appointment I rode to him. I found him a bed, and ſhew him in what good poſture Oneale was, which, as he confeſſd, he knew not before ; bot it was not in my power to diſſuade him from the opinion he had, that the Iriſh durſt not ſtand and looke to him. After ane houres diſcourſe with him, and the drinking halfe a dozen cups of ſacke, I left him and returnd to the Neurie ; and immediatly marchd to Armagh, where the Major Generall had appointed me to meet him, which was fixteene miles. I had cauſd everie one of my ſojors carry twelve ſhot a peece, and had beſides on horſbacke a centner of powder, with ball and match ; for I had learnd of the Major Generall, that none of his men were provided with more then tuo or three ſhot ; a great fault in a generall, or in any man, to have an overweening opinion of himſelfe, and to undervalue his enemy. He gave me the vaun, in regard I had gone farre. We marchd from

Armagh foure miles further into the baronie of Loughgall, a very close countrey full of hedges and ditches. I had told the Major Generall, that undoubtedlie we wold find Oneale before us, and therfor defird that no horſe ſould be permitted to goe before me, in regard they could doe no ſervice in that countrey, bot be ane hinderance to the foot. Yet Major Ballantine wold needs march before me; bot at a place called Anachſhamrie, which was Generall Oneals ounge, he was ſhamefullie chaced backe upon me, tuo of his horſemen being killd, three hurt, and the reſt exceedingly terrified. The roade way being none of the broad-eſt, and ditches on everie ſide, I was more troubled with theſe horſemen then I was with the Irith; bot haveing made way for them as well as I could, I advanced towards the enemy, whom I could not ſee, he haveing ſhelterd himſelfe with 1500 fixd muſketeers in encloſurs ditches and hedges; yet he made me quicklie know where he was, by a ſalve of 4 or 500 ſhot he made at me, at which ſome of my men fell. I then made a ſtand, and lyned the hedges on all ſides of me, conſtantlie firing from them, and advanceing ſtill on the hie way, thogh verie leiſurly. The bodie of Monros foot were a great deale farther behind me then either I thought, or Oneale fancied, otherwiſe. I ſuppoſe he wolde have left his poſt, as advantageous as it was, and advanced on me, being five to one againſt me. The diſpute continued very hote about ane houre, and then Major Borthwick, ſince a colonell, and Captaine Drummond, ſince a lieutenant generall, came up with a great pace to my releefe, and endeavored to cut thorough the hedges, that they might march thorough the encloſurs. Oneale perceaveing his men beganne to looke over their ſhoulders, reſolvd rather to retire then flie; and ſo he did to Charlemont. Thither did alſo runne the moſt part of the countrey people, with neere

3000 cowes, all which we had got if we had purfued our victorie. Owens houfe was immediatlie plunderd and burnt, and fo were many other fine houfes in that right pleafant countrey.

In this fkuffle, I loft thretteene fojors and a fergant, all killd on the place, and about eightene I had wounded ; neither my felfe or any other officer being hurt. The Irifh confefd to have lofd about threefcore. Monro committed heere tuo faults ; firft, for undervaluing his enemy ; nixt, for not purfueing him, after he had made him turne his backe ; for the difappointment he met with did fo quaille him, that he immediatlie marchd back to Armagh, full foure miles : A third he added, in fending, in the very time of the fight, a partie to the right hand to looke for cowes. There being fome diforder or indeed confufion among the hedges, when Oneale retird and Monro marchd backe, many followd that partie that did not belong to it ; yea, fo many, among whom were fome of my 300, that when we came to encampe in enclofurs at Armagh late at night, our bodie, which at beft was but litle, lookd exceeding weake and wearie too, and it was well the Irifh knew it not. Adjutant Generall Lesley fomwhat unadvifedlie ordaind me to be commander of the guards that night, never confidering in what condition I was. After I had gone the great round, I found myfelfe fo wearie after eight and threttie miles rideing and marching, befides the toyle of the skirmifh, haveing fleepd none in 48 houres before, that I was forced to tumble myfelfe doune in my tent, recommending the guards to the Adjutant Generalls care ; which when the Major Generall did heare, he taxd the Adjutant of indiscretion, and undertooke the overfight of the guards himfelfe, Nixt day our fcattering parties comeing in to us, we marchd to Tandergie, where Sir James Lockheart, purfueing fome of the rebels in a

wood, was mortallie shot in the bellie, wherof he dyed nixt morning. We buried him in the Neurie, in as honorable a way as we could. After Monro had given my lord Sinclare a vifite, he returnd to Craikfergus, and left us at the Neurie.

Some other marches he made that fummer, in one wherof we encamped regularlie at Armagh, and fortified ourfelvs; and from thence sent men to befiege Charlemont once more, bot all to no purpofe. At this leager, the Marques, now Duke of Ormond, fignified by a trumpet to us the ceflation he had, by his Majefties appointment, concluded with the Irish for a yeare, and required Monro, in the kings name, to obferve it. Bot he refufd to accept of it, becaufe he had no order for it from his mafters of Scotland. Heere was ftrange worke; a man not able to profecute a warre, yet will not admit of a ceflation. It coft us deare; for fince the king's reftoration, all our arrears were payd us, by telling us we were not in the kings pay, fince we refufed to obey his commands; and very iuftlie we were fo ferved.

Towards the latter end of this yeare 1643, our guarrifon at the Neurie fell in extreame want of all manner of provifions, both for backe and bellie. For this reafon, by Monros toleration, I had a meeting with ane Irish colonell, one Thurlo Oneale, fent by Sir Phelomey. We met at Kirriotter, each of us tuentie horfe, and after ane hours difcourfe, and the drinking fome healths in Scotch aquavitie and Irish uskkiba, we concluded a ceflation of armes with them for our oune guarrifon. Bot this did not fupply our wants; for no monie came to the armie, either from England or Scotland, and very little meale came from Craigfergus to us. Wherfor my lieutenant colonell and I refolved that I fould goe speedilie to Scotland, and procure ane order to the regiment to march

to the Airds and Clandeboy, there or somewhere else to quarter as the rest of the armie did ; and that immediatlie after I was gone, and that a ship with some meale which we hourlie expected was arrivd, he sould ship in his amunition, baggage and sicke men, and then march straight to the Clandeboy. The Neurie was to be deliverd to the English ; for I had gone to Dundalg, and agreed so with my Lord Moore. This was presentlie put in execution ; for I went to Craigfergus, and tooke my leave of the Major Generall, telling him dounright what my errand was to Scotland ; bot conceald from him the resolution, that the regiment sould be with him before my returne.

At my comeing to Scotland, in the beginning of the yeare 1644, I found the generall had marchd in the dead of winter into England, with ane armie of neere 20,000 foot and 2000 horse, to joyne by vertue of the solemne League and Covenant with the rebellious parliament of England, against our oune soveraigne lafull and native lord and king. I followd him on post horses, and found him hide bound at Newcastle ; for he was stopd there by the toune and river, so that he could not get farther south. I represented to him not onlie the condition of my Lord Sinclars regiment, bot of the whole Scots armie in Ireland so feelinglie, that he found himself obliged to relate it to the Committee of Eftates, (wherof the Marquis of Argile was president, by appointment of the usurped parliament of Scotland.) I am calld before them, and to them I represented so passionatlie the miseries of that armie, that they paid ane act for the transportation of it to Scotland, provided the Committee of Eftates at Edinburgh gave their joint consent. I got likewise ane order to approve our delivering the Neurie to the English. My Lord Sinclair is appointed to goe to Ireland with that order of transporta-

tion, and to see it put in execution ; I having assur'd the committee, that all the Scots armie wold be willing to leave Ireland, except perhaps the Major Generall, and a few others whose dissent, I said, wold not prove materiall.

Whill I was heere, I lookd upon the posture this armie of Scots (of which the parliament so much boasted) were in. I found the bodies of the men lustie, well clothd and well monneyd, bot raw, untraind and undisciplind ; their officers for most part young and unexpericnd. They had dividid themselvs in severall bodies, and in severall quarters, everie one or any one of which might with a resolute sally been easilie beate up, and then, in my opinion, the rest would have runne. There was fixe thousand men of Newcastle's armie within the toune, and Lieut. Generall King, then Lord Eithen, with them. I admird then, nor could I wonder enough since, that he never endeavourd to give his countrey-men a visite. He was a person of great honor ; bot what he had savd of it at Vlotho in Germanie, where he made shipwracke of much of it, he losd in England. The Scots maine care was, how to get over Tine, never careing to possesse themselves of a passe on that river for their retreat, so much did they trust to their oune valour and successe. Whill I was there, they indeavord one night to bring boats from the glasse houses, or above them, to the river, and so to make a bridge. Bot fearing the Kings forces sould fall out upon them that were at worke, Argile and his committee sent over Colonell Steuart, with 1200 foot, to stand betweene the workmen and the toune. They had bot a litle narrow bridge to passe in their goeing and comeing, and if 2000 had fallen stoutlie out of the toune on them, they had killd and tane them everie man, for retire they could not. Argile heareing this was my opi-

nion, which was seconded by others, askd Deare Sandie, Sir James Lumfaine and myfelfe, what was best to be done. We were unanimous that false alarums shoud be given about the whole toune, to divert the enemy from fallieing too strong upon Steuart, for the townes utter guards of horse had certified them within of his approach. I was sent with this message to the Generall, whom I found goeing to supper. When I returnd, I was ashamed to relate the answer of that old Capitaine; which was, that he feared the brightness of the night (for it was moonshine) wold discover the burning matches to those on the walls. I told him, the moonshine was a prejudice to the designe, for it wold hinder the matches to be seen; for the more lunts were seen, the better for a false alarme. However, the alarums were made in severall places, which were taken so hotly where I was beside the workmen, that though I calld often to them, it was our owne people, yet some great persons, whom I will not name, calld eagerly for their horses, and when they were on them rode away. The work was left undone, because it was neep tide, and Steuart returnd safely, to the great disgrace of these within. The Scots got over the river afterward, and by peccable made Newcastle's armie almost as strong as their owne, and farre better fojors, moulder away, and the relicks of it take sanctuary within the walls of Yorke. Such was the Kings sad fate, and the infatuated stupidity of these under him. I have often made myfelfe merrie with that nights worke, first to consider how the Committee of Estates, especially their president Argyle, who was a good seaman, did not advert it was neep tide, before they attempted the removeall of the boats: secondly, how they adventurd to face a town wherein there was fixe thousand horse and foot, with 1200 men, and no way for them to re-

treate : thirdlie, of Generall Levens impertinent anfuer to my meſſage ; fourthlie, to ſee men affrayd at their owne ſhadow, men runne away for ane allarme themſelves had cauſd make ; and for a farce to the play, to heare my old Colonell Steuart, when he was returnd to his quarters, vapour and bragge of the orderlie retreat he had made without the loſſe of a man, when there was not ſo much as a foot boy purſueing him. :

My Lord Sinclair and I went poſt to Scotland, where we found my Lord Chancellour and the Committee of Eſtates there very averſe from that transportation, fearing the bad conſequences of it. Whill things are a debateing, my Lord Sinclars regiment lands at Portpatrik. The Laird of Lauiers regiment follows, and after him the Earle of Lothians ; ſo wold all the reſt, bot they wanted ſhipping. The occaſion was this. After I had left Ireland, my Lieutenant-Colonell haveing reſſayd ſome ſupply of meale, ſhipd in tuo field peeces, his amunition, his baggage, ſicke men, and all the meale except ſo much as the ſojors carried on their backes, and marchd by land to the Airds, haveing deliverd the Neurie with the caſtle to theſe were appointed to reſſave it by the Marques of Ormond, lieutenant of Ireland, as we had formerlie agreed to doe. Up- on this the field officers of the whole Scots armie met at Craigfergus, and ſeeing no appearance of my returne, unanimouslie concluded to goe all over to Scotland ; and becauſe they had not veſſells enough for all, ſent theſe three regiments firſt away. This alarumd the Committee at Edenburgh exceedingly. They diſpatch my Lord Sinclair weſt to ſee the regiments well quarterd, no hurt to be done to the countrey, bot moſt of all, that the Covenant reſſayd no prejudice. I went poſt with my Lord to Aire, where we found our regiment.

The Committee haveing well conſiderd the danger might enſue, if the

other seven regiments came to Scotland, send Sir Frederick Hammilton and the Laird of Lauiers over to Ireland, with ten thousand pounds sterline, and seven thousand futes of clothes for the sojors, and some private instructions, to conjure them to remaine in their old duellings ; to which the officers consented, notwithstanding the oath of their Mutuall Affurance, which was then broke and cancelld with as much formalitie, bot with a great deal of more reason, then it was made.

Thus was I at toyle and trouble enough for the space of tuo yeares in Ireland, haveing got no more in the employment then what maintand me. Yet I had a purchase in it of that I value more then any worldlie riches, that was of my deare wife, Mary White, with whom I was first acquainted and then enamourd at the Neurie. She was comd of very good parents ; her father being the second sonne of a knight, and her mother of ane other good familie of the Whites. She was thought by others, much more by me, to be of a good beautie. For the qualities of her mind, I have had such experience of them as they have renderd me happie amidft all the afflictions hath befallen me since. I did not then marry her, becaufe at that time she was tenacious of the Roman Catholick perfuasion, which was verie hatefull to our leading men of Scotland ; neither indeed, in the condition wherein I was then, could I maintaine her in any good fashon.

The Marques of Huntley makeing some buffling in the north, thogh to litle purpose, the Committee orders my Lord Sinclars regiment to march to Stirline, and Lothians to St Jonfton ; that of Lauiers lay in countrey villages. I had then lookd a litle more narroulie in the justice of the cause wherin I servd then formerly I used to doe, and found I had done well enough in my engagement againft the bloodie

rebells in Ireland. Bot the new Solemne League and Covenant (to which the Committee of Eftates requird an absolute fubmiffion) fummmond all my thoughts to a ferious confultation ; the refult wherof was, that it was nothing bot a treacherous and difloyall combination againft lauffull authoritie. Some captaines of my Lord Lothians (who were well enough principld, and had got good information of the defignes of the prime covenanters from the late Lord Chancellor, E. of Glencairne,) and I communicated our thoughts one to another, and then I broke the matter firft to my Lieutenant Colonell, and then to my Lord Sinclare. All of us thought it our duetie to doe the King all the fervice we could againft his ungracious fubjects ; and therefore refolv'd not to take the Covenant, bot to joyne with the Marques of Montroffe, who had the Kings commiffion. In the meane tyme, we made faire weather with the Committee of Eftates, till we got one thoufand pound, and tuo hundreth fterline money for each regiment, and a fute of cloths for everie fojor. The Committee preff'd much the figning of the covenant, with many letters, meffages, and meffengers. We wav'd it with many pecious pretences ; efpeciallie we defird fixe weeks time to advice with our confciences, a thing they had granted to all other fubjectes ; hoping before the end of that time to be in a capacitie to fpeake plainer language.

Meane while my Lieutenant Colonell and I had our feveral confultations with my Lord Erskine, my Lord Napier, the Mafter of Napier, the Mafter of Mederdie, and Laird of Keir, all of them very loyall perfons, with whom we concluded it was fit to fend tuo, one from them and another from us, to Montroffe, who was then in the border, to invite him to come to Stirling, where he fould find caftle, toun and regiment at his devotion, and St Jonfton likewife. And leaft he might

thinke we meant not honneftlie, in regard there had been no good understanding betueene him and my Lord Sinclare formerlie, his neece the Ladie Keir fent him a well knowne token with Harie Steuart, who was the man we fent, and this he reffayed. The meffenger they fent was young Balloch Drummond, then very loyall, whatever he was afterward. I beleeve he got not to him. Bot Montroffe haveing a litle too foone enterd Scotland, and met with a ruffe neere Drumfreis; and upon it re-tird to England, it feems he thought it not fafe with fo inconfiderable troops to hazard fo farre as to Sterline, perhaps not giveing full truft to our promifes; and moft, becaufe the Committee had appointed a fecond levie, which then was farre advanced, under the command of the E. of Callander, who with the deepeft oathes, even wifhing the fupper of our Lord to turne to his damnation, which he was to take nixt Sunday, if ever he fould engadge under thefe or with thefe Covenanters, had perfuaded me in his oune houfe of Callander, and upon a Lords day too, that he would faithfullie ferve the King;—I fay, by Montroffe his neglect, and Calanders perfidie, was loft the faireft occafion that could be wifhd to doe the King fervice. For if that levie had bene fuppreffd, as very foone it fould, and Montroffe have comd to Stirline, and joynd with our tuo regiments, as eafilie he might, he wold with the affiftance of Huntley in the north, and thefe Irish who foone after came over from Antrum, have reducd Scotland without bloodfhed to their duetie and obedience, or els the Scots armie had bene forced to have left England, and marchd home to oppofe us; upon whole retreate, it was more than probable moft of England wold have embracd the Kings intereft; the reputation of the Scots armie at that time keeping up the Englifh parliaments intereft. Bot the inaufpitieous fate

and disastrous destinie of the incomparable good King wold not have it to be so.

A litle before this, Sir George Monro, Colonell Hammilton, and some other officers of the armie in Ireland, had comd over to deale with the Committee of Estates for their oun maintenance, and E. Calander requiring an adjutant generall for his new forces from the Committee, they sought the opinion of these officers, who they thought sufficient for that employment. They were all pleas'd to name me to be the man fitting for it; upon which ane act of Committee was made, without acquainting me with it; that I should have that charge, and continue likewise major as I was. This offer being made to me when I expected Montrosse, and was with good reason dissatisfied with Calander, I refus'd it, pretending I could not undergoe both charges. It was given to Major Douglas, a sonne of the Sheriffe of Teviotdail, who was afterwards a colonell, and killed at Worcestre fight. Notwithstanding of all this, Calander did not give over to give me all imaginable assurances that he wold act for the King, and that the greater power he was invested with, the more vigorously and vigilantly wold he show himselfe active and loyall for his Majestie. This put me in some hopes I might be instrumentall under him to doe the King some service. Withall, I knew I was vehemently suspected by the Committee of Estates, and if I had denuded myselfe of all imployment, which was my greatest securitie, I had runne the hazard of imprisonment, if not worse; for now they had declar'd the supreme power to be in themselves, and therefore all was acted against them must be no better then treason. Upon these grounds my Lord Sinclars regiment march'd into England, and I with them, and made a fashion (for indeed it was

no better) to take the Covenant, that under pretence of the Covenant we might ruine the Covenanters; a thing, (thogh too much practis'd in a corrupt world) yet in it selfe dishonest, finfull and disavoueable; for it is certaine that no evill shoud be done that good may come of it; neither did any good at all come of this, for Calander all along provd true to his own interest and gaine, and false to the Kings, never laying hold on any opportunitie whereby he might, with small difficultie, have done his Majestie signall service. After he enterd England, I wold have undertaken to have made most of his new levied forces, which were about 5000, declare for the King, and forced these who wold not to fly from the armie. Upon this Northumberland and Bishopricke (whose gentrie was still loyall,) wold have risen with us; and thogh shorthlie after that Prince Rupert was beaten at Longmeston mure, yet he haveing brought away neere 4000 horse with him, we wold have beene able to have made him up a gallant armie. *Bot non voluere fata.*

Having cross'd Tyne at Neuburne, Calander invests Newcastle on the other side of the river; haveing first got assurance that the Prince was defeated at Long Meston by Generalls Leven, Manchester and old Fairfaxe, all which three had shamefullie left the field and fled; but Leven fled furthest, for he did not draw bridle till he was at Wedderbie, four and twentie miles from the place of battell. There was reason he shoud take the start of the other tuo, because he had furthest home. Calander lys doune before Hertipoole, a very tenable litle sea toune, wherein was a garrison of 300 men for the King, and had it unworthilie yeelded to him without stroake of sword by Sir Edmund Carew; and Stokton Castle likewise, before which not one man of ours had appeared, for which he was afterward questiond.

A litle before harveft in this yeare 1644, Leven came with all his armie and befeegd Newcastle on Northumberland fide; which was well enough defended eight or nine weeks by Sir Johne Morley, mayor of the toune; bot at length he haveing foolifhlie refused articles, which he might have made at his pleafure, the toune was taken by ftorme, with no great loffe on our fide, and with very litle bloodfhed of the royalifts. My Lord Sinclars regiment were the firft that entered the toune, the firft partie of them of tuo hundreth being led by my felfe, being very well feconded by my Lieutenant Colonell. One of my Captains, Sinclare, foolifhlie running contrar to my command ftraight to the market place, was ther killd. It was well for thefe of that fide within the toune that we entered fo foone, for we gave very good quarter, my Lieutenant Colonell and I cleering the wall all along till the nixt port; there we tooke tuentie gentlemen on horfeback, and 200 foot fojors, and fo made eafie way for my Lord Leviftons, now E. of Lithgows brigade, and Lieutenant Generall Baillies to enter, being before pitifullie beate of; neither did we kill one man within the walls. In the approches our regiment loft very prettie men, bot in the ftorme onlie three. Immediatlíe after the plunder of this toune, (wherof I had not one pennie worth) the armie is put in winter quarters. Whill we befeege Newcastle, Calander is fent with fome regiments to Scotland to oppofe Montroffe, who, with a handfull of Irifh very ill armed, had beaten the Lord Elcho and his armie at Tippermure. Calander ftayd not long, neither had the leaders of the Covenanters better lucke than Elcho, for beaten they were by Montroffe at Aberdeene, and the third time at Innerlochíe, where Argile favd himfelfe foone enough.

Nixt fummer of the yeare 1645, Montroffe did thefe feats which hath

renderd his name immortall. Against him were severall regiments sent the second time from the armie in England. With the rest Leven marchieth southward ; and at Nottingham, some well meaning officers of the armie made a motion to present a petition to the King, according to the laudable custome of both the first and the second Covenanters, before we enterd in any act of hostilitie against him. This had given a stop to the advance of our armie, which the English royalists so much feared. I was desired to draw the petition, which after some refuseall, (apprehending Calanders juggling,) I at length did. But he not onlie refused to signe it himselfe, but to let the Committee see it, (without whom it could not be sent to the King) though never so many officers would subscribe it. And so these honest officers were deceived and abused, as I had foretold them. On our march to Gloucestershire, we had the sad news of the Kings overthrow at Nasebie, after which never any of his forces made a stand. Whill the Scots army invests Hereford, news comes that Montrose had gained the battell of Killfryth, so entirelie that all the covenanting Lords were fled to Berwick. Lieutenant Generall Lesley upon this is sent away to Scotland, with most of the cavallerie, to oppose successfull Montrose, whom he had the good fortune, as he thought it, to beate at Philiphaugh ; where Major Generall Middleton, now Earle, was very active against, though since very active for the King. After some weeks stay at the siege of Hereford, upon a rumour of the Kings approach with some forces, we broke up and marchd north, and that harvest quarterd in Yorkshire; and in the beginning of winter, helpd the English forces to blocke up Newark on Trent, from whence a litle before his Majestie was gone with 500 horse to Oxford. Heere old Generall Leven left us and went to Neu-

castle, forced therto by order of the Parliament of Scotland. I am very fure, fore against his will he parted with a command wherby he could have put aboundance of money in his pocket, which Lieutenant Generall David Lesley could not choose bot doe. We past that winter with very much cold, bot very litle bloodshed; bot so did they not at St Andreus, where the pretended parliament dyed some scaffolds very red, with the loyall blood of many of his Majesties faithfull subjects.

In the summer of the yeare 1646, the Kings fate driveing him on to his neere approaching end, he cast himself in the Scots armes at Neuarke. There did E. Lothian, as president of the Committee, to his eternall reproach, imperiouſlie require his Majestie (before he had either drunke, refreshed, or repofed himſelfe,) to command my Lord Bellafis to deliver up Neuarke to the Parliaments forces, to ſigne the Covenant, to order the eſtabliſhment of preſbiterian government in England and Ireland, and to command James Grahame, (for ſo he called Great Montroſſe) to lay doune armes; all which the King ſtoutlie refuſed; telling him that he who had made him ane Earle had made James Grahame a Marques. Barbarouſlie uſed he was, ſtrong guards put upon him, and centinells at all his windows, that he ſould caſt over no letters; and at length Neuarke by his order being given up, he is carried with a very ſpeedie march to Neucaſtle, where he was well enough guarded. At Sherburne I ſpoke with him, and his Majestie haveing got ſome good character of me, bade me tell him the ſence of our armie concerning him. I did ſo, and withall affurd him he was a priſoner, and therefor prayd him to think of his eſcape, offering him all the ſervice I could doe him. He ſeemd to be well-

pleased with my freedome, and the grieve I had for his condition ; bot our conversation was interrupted very uncivillie (for I was in the roome alone with his Majestie) by Lieutenant Generall Lesleys command, wherein he made use of tuo whom I will not name, because the one is dead, and I hope the other hath repented ; neither was I ever permitted afterward to speake with him ; yet he namd me, as one of five fitting to carry his commands to Montrosse, bot the Committee made choyce of a man by Lothians persuation, fitter for their purpose. Most of that winter, till neere Candlemas, was spent in quarters, which were allotted us in some places of Yorkshire, Durham, and Northumberland all over ; meane time goes Argile to London.

When I perceavd things in this troublesome condition, not knowing what might be the issue, whether I might not be necessitated to fly beyond seas, (for the Committee and Generall entertained very ill thoughts of me,) and not daring to goe to Irland, least they shoud thinke I went about more serious affaires, I sent and desired her who was to be my wife, to be at the trouble to come to England to me, which she willinglie did. This both shew her affection to me, and the trust she reposed in mine ; leaveing her parents, her friends, countrey and all that was deare to her, upon my word. And indeed she found me but in a bad condition, and it was well it was no worse ; for haveing drunke at one time too much at parting with a great person, rideing home I met one Colonell Wren, betweene whom and me there was some animositie. He was a foot, and I lighted from my horse ; drinke prevailing over my reason, I forced him to draw his sword, which was tuo great handfulls longer then mine. This I perceiving, gripd his sword with my left hand, and thrust at him with my right ; bot he stepping

backe avoyded it, and drew his fuord away, which left so deepe a wound betueene my thumbe and formost finger, that I had almost losd the use of both, unles I had beene well cured. Ane other hurt I got in my left arme. The passengers parted us ; bot I could never find him out after, to be revengd on him, though I fought him farre and neere. This was ane effect of drinking, which I confesse, beside the sinne against God, hath brought me in many inconveniences. This was the first time ever my blood was draune, though I have hazarded it and my life very often, not onlie in battells, skirmishes, rencounters, sieges, sallies, and other publick dueties of service, bot also in severall private duells. I was not well recoverd, when she I lovd best came to England. Shortlie after, we were married at Hexame, in prefence of ane honourable companie, on the tenth of November, 1646. Many sad storms and blasts of adverfitie hath she patientlie stood out with me since, and both of us have reason to blesse our good God, who hath graciousslie deliverd us out of them all.

In Februaire 1647, the Committee haveing receaved 200,000lb. sterline, for the arrears of the armie (for so it was calld), the King is shamefullie deliverd over to the Commiffioners of the two Houses of England, and that by a vote too of the Parliament of Scotland, to the eternall disgrace of the whole nation. He is first carried to Holmbie House ; and after the armie had chaced the eleven Presbiterian members of the House of Commons beyond seas, they take his Majestie to Hampton Court, and after many jugling tricks of Cromwell, he is carried to Carisbrok Castle in the Isle of Wight, out of which he never came till he was led to his arraignment. The Scotch armie marcheth to Scotland and is modelled in seven regiments of foot, thretteene troops of horse, and

three companies of dragooners. All the rest are disbanded. My Lord Sinclars regiment is orderd to goe backe to Ireland. They - - - by the way at Peebles, and some runne away. Quarters are appointed for them, and E. Lothians regiment in Galloway, till I went over to Ireland, to try whether Monro and his officers (for that armie was then governd by a councell of officers, wherof the Major Generall was president,) wold make us welcome or not, I found the coast guarded with fojors to barre our landing, which I lookd on as a bad omen. At my coming to Craigfergus, the officers are calld together. I deliverd them a letter from the Scots Parliament, and endeavord to perswade them to reslave us as antient members of their bodie; telling them that we were to bring such provisions with us, that we sould not be burthen-some to them. Bot I harangud them in vaine, for I found, thogh they wold not speake it dounright, they wold not admit us at all; for thogh they had beene well beate by Owen Oneale the yeare before, yet they fancied they sould then receive ten thousand pounds sterline for everie regiment, and they thought if our tuo regiments joynd with them, we might occasion a diminution of the foume. Upon my returne, and the burthen Galloway had of us, order comes to us from the Committee of Eftates, to disband, which was accordinglie done. This was the end of my Lord Sinclars regiment, which indeed was composed of prettie men, stout and loyall, both officers and fojors, to which I had beene serjeant major full five yeares.

Shortlie after, Lieutenant Generall Lesley having reduced the North to the obedience of the Committee of Eftates, by takeing all Huntleys houses, and chaceing himselfe and his party to their hieland shelters, marched south, being to goe into Kintire. I met him at Dumblaine,

where he, the late Marques of Argile, and Major Generall Holburne, easilie perswaded me to accept of the Adjutant Generalls place of the armie, then vacant; for indeed I thought it duetie to fight against these men who first had diserted their Generall Montrosse, as E. Aboine and Sir Alaister Macdonnald had done when he stood most in need of them, which mainlie had occasiond his irreparable losse at Philipshauch; and nixt had absolutlie refusd to lay down armes at the Kings ounge command, carried to them by Sir James Lesley. I was necessitated to stay for some baggage a day or tuo, and thereafter met the armie at Inverraray, Argiles chiefe house. From thence we marchd to Kintire, which is a peninfull. Both before and at the entrie to it, there were such advantages of ground, that our foot, for mountains and marshes, could never have draune up one hundreth in a bodie, nor our horse above three in breast; which if Sir Alaister had prepossessd with these thousand or 1200 brave foot which he had with him, I think he might have routed us, at least we shoud not have enterd Kintire bot by a miracle. Bot he was ordaind for destruction; for by a speedie march we made ourselves masters of these difficell passes, and got into a plaine countrey, where no sooner he saw our horse advance, but with little or no fighting he retird; and if the Lieutenant Generals foot had been with him to have given theemie a salve or tuo, which would have disorderd him, I beleve none of them had escaped from our horse. Alaister, like a foole, (for no sojour he was, though stout enough,) put in 300 of his best men in a house on the top of a hill, calld Dunavertie, environd with a stone wall, where there was not a drop of water but what fell from the clouds. Then leaveing Kintire he went to Yla, where he playd just such ane other mad prank, leaveing his old father, commonlie

called Coll Kettoch, with neere 200 mien in a castle, called Dunneveg, where was no water either bot what the heavens afforded. The rest of his men he carried with him to Ireland, (ane excellent Generall Major) where he was killd in a battell fought by those with whom he joynd against my Lord Taffe, now Earle of Carlingford. We beseege Dunavertie, which keepd out well enough, till we stormd a trench they had at the foot of the hill, wherby they commanded tuo stripes of water. This we did take in the assault. Fortie of them were put to the suord. We lofd five or fixe, with Argiles Major. After this, inexorable thirst made them desire a parley. I was orderd to speake with them; neither could the Lieutenant Generall be movd to grant any other conditions, then that they shoud yeeld on discretion or mercy; and it seemd strange to me to heare the Lieutenant Generalls nice distinction, that they shoud yeeld themselves to the kingdomes mercy, and not to his. At length they did so; and after they were comd out of the Castle, they were put to the suord, everie mothers sonne, except one young man, Mackoull, whose life I begd, to be sent to France with a hundreth countrey fellows whom we had smoakd out of a cave, as they doe foxes, who were given to Capitaine Cambell, the Chancellors brother.

Heere it will be fit to make a stop till this cruell action be canvaid. First, the Lieutenant Generall was tuo days irresolute what to doe. The Marques of Argile was accusd, at his arraignment, of this murther, and I was examin'd as a witnes. I depond, that which was true, that I never heard him advice the Lieutenant Generall to it. What he did in private I know not. Secondlie, Argile was bot a Colonell there, and so had no pouer to doe it of himselfe. Thirdlie, thogh he had advisd him to it, it was no capitall crime; for counsell is no com-

mand. Fourthlie, I have severall times spoke to the Lieutenant Generall to save these mens lives, and he allways assented to it ; and I know of himselfe he was unwilling to shed their blood. Fifthlie, Mr Johne Nave (who was appointed by the commiffion of the kirke to waite on him as his chaplaine,) never ceas'd to tempt him to that bloodshed ; yea and threatened him with the curses befell Saull for spareing the Amalekites, for with them his theologie taught him to compare the Dunavertie men. And I verilie beleeve that this prevaild most with David Lesley, who lookd upon Nave as the representative of the Kirk of Scotland. Lastlie, there is no doubt bot the Lieutenant Generall might legallie enough, without the least transgression of either the custome, practise, or law of warre, or his oune commiffion, have ufd them as he did ; for he was bound by no article to them, they haveing submitted themselvs absolutlie to his discretion. It is true, on the other hand, *summum jus, summa injuria* ; and in such cases, mercy is the more christian, the more honourable, and the more ordinarie way in oure warres in Europe. Bot I reallie beleeve, advise him to that act who will, he hath repented it many times since, and even very soone after the doing it.

From Kintire we went by sea to Yla, and immediatlie invested Dunneveg. I must remember, by the way, that we carried bot about fourscore horses with us after we left Kintire, the rest of the troopes being left in Lorne, under the command of Colonell Robert Montgomerie, since Generall Major, who blockd up the house of belonging to Mackoull in Lorne, whose clan was, as I said, extirpated very neere at Dunavertie. Dunneveg, after a stout resistance, for want of water, came to a parley. I am appointed to treat with one Captaine

Oneale and one Donald Gorum, who came out of the house on the Lieutenant Generalls word. Life was promised to them ; all the officers to goe where they pleased ; the sojors to be transported to France, and given to Henry Sinclair my old Lieutenant Colonell. The articles I saw couchd in writeing and signd by both Argile and Lesley. This capitulation was faithfullie observed. A litle skurvie ile in the end of Yla was keepd by a bastard sonne of Coll Kittoch, which we left to its fortune. Bot before we were masters of Dunneveg, the old man Coll, comeing foolisshlie out of the house, where he was governour, on some parole or other, to speake with his old friend the Captaine of Dunstaffage Castle, was surprisid and made prisoner, not without some stain to the Lieutenant Generalls honor. He was afterwards hangd by a jury of Argiles sheriff depute, one George Cambell, from whose sentence few are said to have escapd that kind of death.

From Yla we boated over to Jura, a horride ile, and a habitation fit for deere and wild beafts ; and so from ile to ile till we came to Mull, which is one of the best of the Hebrides. Heere Macclaine savd his lands with the losse of his reputation, if ever he was capable to have any. He gave up his strong castles to Lesley, gave his eldest sonne for hostage of his fidelitie, and, which was unchristian basenes in the lowest degree, he deliverd up fourteene very prettie Irishmen, who had beene all along faithfull to him, to the Lieutenant Generall, who immediatlly causd hang them all. It was not well done to demand them from Macclaine, bot inexcusable ill done of him to betray them. Heere I cannot forget one Sir Donald Cambell, a very old man, fleshd in blood from his very infancie, who with all imaginable violence presd that all the whole clan of Macclaine should be put to the edge of the sword ; nor

would he be commanded to forbear his bloody fute by the Lieutenant Generall and the two Generall Majors, and with some difficultie was he commanded silence by his chiefe the Marques of Argile. For my part I said nothing, for indeed I did not care though he had prevaild in his fute, the deliverie of the Irish had so much irritated me against the whole name. As we were going to Mull, Major Generall, since E. Middleton, (who had with two regiments of foot and some troops of horse ruind the relicks of Huntleys partie,) came to us. With him I had some conferences concerning the Kings condition, who at that time was at Hampton Court. Then first I found he beganne in earnest to oune his Majesties interest. Great jealousies there were then of all parties both in England and Scotland. Argile and Leslie thought fit to separate me from Middleton, and so sent me to Edinburgh to give the Estates an account of our successes, and to desire quarters to be provided for the armie against our descent to the low countrey. Thither I went, and after Leslie had taken in an old castle in Knoggard or Moggart, I know not which, I met him on his march to Stirline, ten miles on the other side of that town, bringing with me the quarters ordered for the severall regiments and troopes; which being divided, every one went straight to his oune.

The Committee of Estates, and consequentlie the visible soveraigne pouer of Scotland at that time, is divided between the Duke Hamilton and the Marques of Argile. The last kept stronglie by the church, and had it for him; and for feare that did not his turne, he kept the armie, at least Leven and David Leslie for him, as knowing, *omnia sunt gladii pedissequa*. Yet the Hamiltons had gaind much on Middleton, who had a strong influence on the armie. Hamilton, to beate Argile out of his strongest fortresse, propons the dis-

banding the armie as very useles now, and which was worfe, very burthenfome, all the enemies of the ftate being rangd to their duetie. This was not onlie a plaufible pretext, bot ane unanfuerable argument ; bot marke the reply of the other partie. “ Never fo great danger as now ; the Kings perfon, which they were bound to defend by the oath of their Covenant (obferve, there was no former ty on them,) being in the hands of the Independents, who were fuorne enemies to his facred perfon and to prefbiterie, and carying now all things before them in the Englifh Parliament, were become very formidable.” So impudentlie could thefe hipocrites make ufe of the fafetie of the King, to fupport their power, by the ufurpation wherof they had brought him to that low condition, and whole deftruction they ftill defignd. To this they adde a ridiculouffie palpable ly, that the Marques of Huntley was ftrong and marching fouthward, waxd numerous, and to ufe their oune words, grew great like a fnow ball ; that poore Marques, in the meane time, hideing himfelfe in holes and caves, out of which he is about that fame time draune, and carried to Edenburgh and caft in the tollbooth, out of which he never came till he was brought to a fcaffold. The matter of the armies difbanding is referd to the meeting of a great Committee, whole members are fummond by Argile and the kirk to come from the remoteft places of the kingdome, and when they meet, they vote the armie to ftand. By this favour they obliged many officers, to eafe the kingdome forfooth, to quite a third part of their pay voluntarilie ; for which fimplicite the kirk cryd them up for good patriots ; and this was enough to put thefe fimpletons in the full poffeffion of a fools paradife.

Bot before all this was done, E. Lainrick, brother to Duke Hamil-

ton is made one of these commiffioners which they called the Committee of both kingdomes. The Chancloer and he went to London, and from thence, by the Parliaments permiffion, to the Ile of Wight, where they had feverall conferences with his Majeftie. Many conceffions they obtaind from him againft Poperie, Arminianifme, Socinianifme, Libertinifme, Eraftianifme, and I know not what els, and many promifes they made to him, and fo returnd to Scotland. A Parliament is calld, which either confifted of the royall or purlie Hammiltonian partie; Argiles being the leaft of the three, the election of the members was fo dexteroufflie carried. Bot in the Commiffion of the Kirke, Argile carryd all before him. And now the fcene is changd. The King is in no danger; the Parliament of England, thogh independent, and Scotland are good friends; they muft not fall out; the union of the tuo kingdomes muft be preferved; the King in his conceffions had not taken away Prelacie, and therefore all the reft of his grants were hipocriticall; neither were the Scots bound to defend his perfon by vertue of the Covenant, bot in the defence of the true religion, which, according to their gloffe, is prefbiteriall government; and therfor no armie muft be raifd for his releafment or reftoration, onlie the Englifh Parliament wold be defird to fuffer them to treat with the King, whose perfon, according to promife, fould be keepd in honor, freedome and fafetie. Heere yow fee ane armie neceffare and not neceffare, for one and the fame caufe. Yow will thinke that ftrange, bot I will unriddle yow. Neceffare for the Kings defence, and to withftand the power of the Independents, fo long as old Leven and David Leslie commanded it; not neceffare for thefe or any other caufes, if Duke Hamilton and Earle Calander had the conduct of it. Whether the great fumes of money the Englifh Commiffioners brought

with them, had an influence on the leading men of the state, the kirk and the armie, Sir James Stewart, once Provost of Edinburgh, yet alive, can well enough tell. This rent betwene the usurped state and the usurped kirk, was the first step to the ruine of the whole designe of the yeare 1648 ; for in the time of this furious dif . . . . our levies were retarded, and time given to Fairfaxe and Cromwell to destroy all the Kings partie in England. At length the raising of an armie is carried in spite of Argile and the kirk. Duke Hammilton is declar'd Generall ; E. Calander, (who once more appear'd to owe the Kings interest,) Lieutenant Generall of the armie ; Middleton Lieutenant Generall of the horse, and Baillie of the foot.

But before this was done, a petition is draune up by Argile and his friends, (the Chancellor playing fast and loose with both parties,) which is call'd the petition of the armie, which was to secure religion (for these were the kirks words) and the kingdome of Chrif, before any forces were rais'd for the Kings releasment. It is sign'd privatlie by Leven, Da. Leslie, Major Generall Holburne, Sir Johne Broun, Colonell Scot and some others, and then presented publiklie to the rest of us, thinking we could not, being sojors, refuse to follow our leaders. But they found themselves mistaken ; for Major Generall Middleton, and the honest part of the officers of the armie told them, that such a petition, which look'd so like mutinie, could not be presented to the Parliament without incurring the dishonour which Fairfaxe, his armie had draune upon itselfe, to impose on the Parliament of England. To oppose this petition, Middleton was pleas'd to make use of me ; neither was I, indeed, unwilling to contribute all my endeavors for the destruction of a paper which, if it had bene red, wold have spoke with

fo loud a voyce, that many of the members, who were bot indifferent, wold have spoke Argiles language very plainlie. The busienes was so handled that it was never presented.

Innumerable allmost were the petitions that came from all places of the kingdome, against the raising of forces for his Majesties releasment. Glasgow being a considerable toun, was most refractorie to this Parliament; for Mr Dick, whom they lookd upon as a patriarch, Mr Baillie, Mr Gillespie and Mr Durhame, all mightie members of the kirk of Scotland, had preachd them to a perfite disobedience of all civill power, except such as was authorisd by the Generall Assemblie and Commiffion of the Kirk; and so indeed was the whole west of Scotland, who cryd up King Chrif, and the kingdome of Jesus Chrif, therby meaning the uncontroullable and unlimited dominion of the then kirk of Scotland, to whom they thought our Saviour had deliverd over his scepter, to governe his militant church as they thought fit. For this reason, I am sent to Glasgow to reduce it to obedience, with three troops of horfe, and Holburns regiment of foot, which a litle before that had mutind in the Links of Lieth; (their colonell, lieutenant colonell, and all their captains haveing deserted them,) bot the mutinie was with some difficultie compescd by myfelfe, and that regiment brought by me the length of Cramond, in its march to Glasgow. In Glasgow were many honnest and loyall men, the prime wherof wer the Cambells and the Bells; and indeed I had good helpe of Coline Cambell, James Bell and Bayliffe James Hamilton. At my comeing there I found my worke not very difficill; for I fhortlie learnd to know, that the quartering tuo or three troopers, and halfe a dozen musketeers, was ane argument strong enough, in two or three nights time, to make

the hardest headed Covenanter in the toune to forsake the kirk, and fide with the Parliament. I came on the friday, and nixt day sent to Mr Dick, and desired him and his brethren to say nothing nixt day in their pulpits that might give me just reason to disturb the peace of the church. In the forenoone he spoke us very faire, and gave us no occasion of offence; but in the afternoone he transgressed all limits of modestie, and raild malitiously against both King and Parliament. This obliged me to command all my officers and sojors to goe presently out of the church, because I neither could nor would suffer any under my command to be witnesses of a misdemeanor of that nature. At the first Dick was timorous, and promised if I would stay, he would give me satisfaction; but I told him I would trust him no more, since he had broke his promise made in the forenoone. Seeing I intended no worse but to remove, he continued his sermon, and nixt day went to Edinburgh to complaine; but sent one that same night to make his grievance to the Duke, who was come the day before to his palace of Hammilton. Thither I went nixt morning. His Grace approved of all I had done; and there was reason for it; because I had done nothing but by his own order, and his brother E. Lainricks advice. This was that great and well neere inexpiable sinne which I committed against the sacred soveraigntie of the kirk; for which all members were so implacable and irreconcilable enemies to me afterward.

Finding my Glasgow men growne prettie tame, I tenderd them a short paper, which whoever signed I promised should be presently eased of all quartering. It was nothing but a submission to all orders of Parliament, agreeable to the Covenant. This paper was afterward by some merrie men christend Turners Covenant. It was quickly signed

by all, except some inconsiderable persons ; and so soone as Duke Hamilton had causd read my letter in Parliament, and the signd papers sent to the Clarke Register, I was orderd to march to Renfrew, to reduce that shire to obedience. I left the Generall of the Artilleries regiment, which was not very strong, at Glasgow, and marchd with my owne (for the Parliament had given me that of Holburns, and my Lord Duke had placd me himselfe at Glasgow) and eleven troops of horse ; for still as they were levied in the east, they were sent west to me. I lay at Paislay myselfe with my regiment, and quarterd my troopes round about. Bot the people from severall parishes came so fast to me, offering their obedience to the Parliament, that I knew not well how to quarter my present men, much lesse these troops, and Calanders regiment, which were on their march westward.

Meantime a pettie rebellion must be usherd in by religion, yea, by one of the sacredest misteries of it, even the celebration of our Lords supper ; so finely could these pretended saints make that *vinculum pacis*, that bond of peace, the commemoration of our Savieours sufferings and death, that peace so often inculcated, and left as a legacie by our blessed Lord to his whole Church ; so handsomelie, I say, could these hypocrits make it the simbole of warre, and bloody broyles. Whill I lay at Paislay, a communion, as they call it, is to be given at Machlin church, to pertake wherof all good people are permitted to come ; bot because the times were, forsooth, dangerous, it was thought fit all the men shoud come armed. Nixt Monday, which was their thanksgiving day, there were few lesse to be seene about the church then tuo thousand armed men, horse and foot. I had got some intelligence of the designe before, and had acquainted the Duke with it ; who orderd me expresse not to

sturre till Calander and Middletones coming; who accordinglie on the Saturday before the communion came to Glasgow, where I met them, and then went straight forward to Paislay. A rendezvous is appointed by Calander to be of horse and foot at Steuarton hill next Monday. From thence Lieut. General Middleton is sent with fixe troopes of horse to Machlin moore, where the armed communicants were said to be. I intreated my Lord Calander (bot to no purpose) not to divide, bot rather march with all his forces, then hazard the overthrow of a few, which might endanger the whole. We advanced with the rest, as the foot could march; bot it was not long before we heard that the communicants had refused to goe to their houses; and having refflaved a briske charge of Middletons forlorne hope, had worsted it; and that himselfe and Colonell Urrey comeing up to the rescue, were both wounded in the heade; which had so appalld their troopes, that if they lost no ground, they were glad to keepe what they had, and looke upon the saints. These unexpected news made Calander leave my regiment at Kilmarnock, and take his horse with him up to Middleton. I intreated him to march at least at a great trot, if not at a gallope; bot he would be more orderlie, and therefor marchd more sloulie. We met numbers of boys and bedees, weeping and crying all was lost; bot at our appearance the flashing communicants left the field, the horse trulie untouchd, because not fiercelie pursued. About fixtie of their foot were taken, and five officers. The ministers that came in our power, who had occasiond the mischief, were next day dismissed. Next day we marchd into Aire, where a court of warre is appointed to be kept about the prisoners. The country fellows of them are pardoned; the officers sentenced to be hanged or shot; bot thereafter were par-

dond ; to which I was very instrumentall, thogh I had bene president in the court of warre. Lieutenant Generall Middletons wound, and Colonel Urreys sufferd them to ride abroad within foure or five days. We knew not well what to doe, for Lambert was on the Border with a strong part of the English armie, and in a manner keepd Sir Marmaduke Langdail blockd up at Carlile. Our west countrey was not at all settled, bot very readie for new commotions. Upon this E. Calander desires a conference with the Duke, who then was at Edinburgh, to be at his owne house of Hamilton, to which the Duke readilie assented.

I had left my wife at Glasgow, and therfor desired libertie to goe there, and bid her good night, and accordinglie went thither. Within two nights came E. Calander, and Lieutenant Generall Middleton, and with them I went to Hammilton, takeing my leave of my deare wife, whom I did not see againe till she saw me prisoner at Hull.

At Hammilton, we could not bot with much regret and displeasure consider, that Sir Marmaduke and his Lieutenant Generall Sir Philip Musgrave, both gentlemen of untainted loyaltie and gallantrie, had not onlie unseasonable, and contrare to the advices given them, raisd above 3000 foot and horse, bot had marchd with them into Lancashire, and therby had given a just pretext to the Parliament to send Lambert with a more considerable power, to give a stop to their further proceedings ; which he did so vigorously, that Langdale was glad to shelter himselfe under the walls of Carlile. This exposd him to a certaine and present ruine, unles he were succourd. To marche to his reliefe, were to leave the halfe of our forces in Scotland unleavied, and ane enemy behind our hand, ourselves in a very bad condition, without money, meale, artillerie, or amunition ; to suffer him to perish was

againſt honor, conſcience, and the reaſon both of ſtate and warre. It wold have given our enemies occaſion to inſult ; wold have brought the Dukes honor (rudlie enough dealt with [by] ſome before) to an everlaſting loſſe, and wold have given ſuch juſt apprehenſions of jealousies to the royaliſts in England, that never one of them wold have joynd with us, or ound us. The further debate of this buſienes is delayd till the Duke, Calander and Middleton went to Edinburgh to adviſe with the Committee of Eſtates, for the Parliament was then diſſolv'd. Bot in the meane time Colonell Lockheart is ſent to command ſome brigades of horſe at Anan, and I orderd to goe preſentlie to Drumfreis, to take the command of fixe or ſeven regiments of foot, which were to be ſhortlie there. Our neernes to Carlile was thought might give Lambert ſome ombrages of both a ſtronger and a neerer approach. Neither were we miſtaken in our conjecture ; for ſo ſoone as we began to rally there, he drew his troops neerer together, and ſo Sir Marmaduk got aire, and with it ſome meate for himſelfe, and graſſe for his horſes.

In this poſture did Lockheart and I ſtay about a fortnight, twelve miles diſtant one from ane other, till (Sir Marmaduks reliefe being concluded on at Edinburgh as purlie neceſſare,) my L. Duke, E. Calander, and Lieutenant Generall Middleton and Baillie, with many, bot weake regiments of horſe and foot, randevouſed at Anan. There I met them with my litle infantrie, amunition and a great deale of meale, which had beene ſent to me from Edinburgh and other places. Nixt day we advanced into England, order being given for all the regiments of the whole kingdome to haſte after us, except ſuch as were orderd to ſtay for defence of the countrey againſt our hidden enemies ; and theſe were to be commanded by E. Lainrick, as commander in chiefe

at home. Our advance obligd Lambert to retire. Some skirmishes we had with him for a day or tuo, bot to litle purpofe. At length he got to Steinmure, where he beganne to fortifie himfelfe. The Duke is neceffitated to ftay ten or twelve days at Kirbie-thure, to reflave thofe regiments were marching from Scotland, which did not exceed the halfe of their numbers they fould have beene, all neulie levied, raw and undisciplind; and that fummer was fo exceffivlie rainie and wet, that I may fay it was not poffible for us to keepe one mufket often fixd, all the time we were in a bodie in England. Adde to this that we had no canon, nay not one field peece, very litle amunition, and not one officer to direct it. Deare Sandie being groune old and doated, had given no fitting orders for thefe things. Whill the Duke lyes at Kirbie-thure, Sir Marmaduke befiegeth the caftle of Applebie, in which Lambert had left a guarrifon. I am fent with tuo brigads to ly neere him, for feare Lambert fould face about upon him. Within a few days the caftle yeelded.

Heere I will fet downe ane accident befell me; for thogh it was not a very ftrange one, yet it was a very od one in all its parts. My tuo brigads lay in a village within halfe a mile of Applebie; my oun quarter was in a gentlemans houfe, who was a Ritmafter, and at that time with Sir Marmaduke; his wife keepd her chamber readie to be brought to bed. The caftle being over, and Lambert farre enough, I refolvd to goe to bed everie night, haveing had fatigue enough before. The firft night I sleepd well enough; and rifeing nixt morning, I mifd one linnen ftockine, one halfe filke one and one boothofe, the accouftrement under a boote for one leg; neither could they be found for any fearch. Being provided of more of the fame kind, I made myfelfe

reddie, and rode to the head quarters. At my returne, I could heare no news of my stockins. That night I went to bed, and nixt morning found myselfe juſt ſo uſed ; miſſing the three ſtockins for one leg onlie, the other three being left intire as they were the day before. A narrower ſearch then the firſt was made, bot without ſucceſſe. I had yet in reſerve one paire of whole ſtockings, and a paire of boothoſe greater then the former. Theſe I put on my legs. The third morning I found the ſame uſage, the ſtockins for one leg onlie left me. It was time for me then, and my ſervants too, to imagine it muſt be rats that had ſhard my ſtockins ſo equallie with me ; and this the miſtreſs of the houſe knew well enough, bot wold not tell it me. The roome, which was a low parlour, being well ſearchd with candles, the top of my great boothoſe was found at a hole, in which they had drawne all the reſt. I went abroad, and orderd the boards to be raiſed, to ſee how the rats had diſpoſd of my moveables. The miſtreſs ſent a ſervant of her owne to be preſent at this action, which ſhe knew concernd her. One boord being bot a litle open, a litle boy of mine thruſt in his hand, and fetchd with him foure and tuentie old peeces of gold, and one angell. The ſervant of the houſe affirmd it appertained to his miſtreſs. The boy bringing the gold to me, I went immediatlie to the gentlewomans chamber, and told her, it was probable Lambert haveing quarterd in that houſe, as indeed he had, ſome of his ſervants might have hid that gold ; and if ſo, it was lafullie mine ; bot if ſhe could make it appeare it belongd to her, I ſould immediatlie give it her. The poore gentlewoman told me with many teares, that her huſband being none of the frugalleſt men (and indeed he was a ſpendthrift) ſhe had hid that gold without his knowledge, to make uſe of it as ſhe had oc-

caſion, eſpeciallie when ſhe lay in ; and conjurd me, as I lov'd the King, (for whom her huſband and ſhe had ſufferd much) not to detain her gold. She ſaid, if there was either more or leſſe then foure and tuentie whole peeces, and two halfe ones, it ſould be none of hers, and that they were put by her in a red velvet purſe. After I had given her aſſurance of her gold, a new ſearch is made, the other angell is found, the velvet purſe all gnawd in bits, as my ſtockins were, and the gold instantlie reſtord to the gentlewoman. I have often heard that the eating or gnauing of cloths by rats is ominous, and portends ſome miſchance to fall on theſe to whom the cloths belong. I thank God I was never addicted to ſuch divinations, or heeded them. It is true, that more miſfortuns then one fell on me ſhortlie after ; bot I am ſure I could have better forſeene them myſelfe then rats or any ſuch vermine, and yet did it not. I have heard indeed many fine ſtories told of rats, how they abandon houſes and ſhips, when the firſt are to be burnt, and the ſecond dround. Naturaliſts ſay they are very ſagacious creatures, and I beleeeve they are ſo ; bot I ſhall never be of the opinion they can forſee future contingencies, which I ſuppoſe the divell himſelfe can neither forknow nor fortell ; theſe being things which the Almighty hath keepd hidden in the boſome of his divine preſcience. And whither the great God hath preordained or predeſtinated theſe things, which to us are contingent, to fall out by ane uncontrollable and unavoidable neceſſitie, is a queſtion not yet decided.

My Lord Duke marcheth on with this ill equipd and ill orderd armie of his, in which I being Colonell of a regiment, I officiated alſo as Adjutant Generall, or rather indeed doing the duetie of Major Generall of the infantrie, ſince there was none namd for it. To relieve

Langdale at Carlile, brought us out of the roade, and truelie we never came in the right way againe ; so true is the old saying, once wrong and ay wrong. At Hornbie, a days march beyond Kendall, it was advisd whether we sould march be Lancashire, Cheshire and the western counties, or if we sould goe into Yorkshire, and so put ourselvs in the straight roade to London, with a resolution to fight all wold oppose us. Calander was indifferent ; Middleton was for Yorkshire ; Baillie for Lancashire. When my opinion was askd, I was for Yorkshire, and for this reason onlie, that I understood Lancashire was a close countrey, full of ditches and hedges, which was a great advantage the English would have over our raw and undisciplind musketeers ; the Parliaments armie consisting of experienced and well traird sojors, and excellent firemen ; on the other hand, Yorkshire being a more open countrey, and full of heaths, where we both might make use of our horse, and come sooner to push of pike. My Lord Duke was for Lancashire way, and it seemd he had hopes that some forces would joyne with him in his march that way. I have indeed heard him say, that he thought Manchester his oune, if he came neere it. Whatever the matter was, I never saw him tenacious in any thing during the time of his command bot in that. We choosd to goe that way, which led us to our ruine. Our march was much retarded by most rainie and tempestuous weather, wherof I spoke before, the elements fighting against us ; and by staying for countrey horses to carry our little amunition. The vanguard is constantlie given to Sir Marmaduke, upon condition he sould constantlie furnish guides, pioneers for clearing the ways, and which was more than both these, to have good and certaine intelligence of all the enemies motions. Bot whither it was

by our falt or his neglect, want of intelligence helpd to ruine us ; for Sir Marmaduke was well neere totallie routed, before we knew that it was Cromwell that attackd us : *Quos vult perdere, hos dementat Jupiter.*

Befide Preston in Lancashire, Cromwell falls on Sir Marmadukes flanke. The English imagine it was one Colonell Ashton, a powerfull presbiterian, who had got together about 3000 men to oppose us, because we came out of Scotland without the Generall Assemblies permission. Marke the quarrell. While Sir Marmaduke disputes the matter, Baillie, by the Dukes order, marcheth to Ribble Bridge, and passeth it with all the foot, except tuo brigads. This was tuo miles from Preston. By my Lord Dukes command, I had sent some amunition and commanded men to Sir Marmaduks assistance ; bot to no purpose ; for Cromwell prevaild, so that our English first retird and then fled. It must be rememberd that the night before this sad rencounter, E. Calander and Middleton were gone to Wigham, eight miles from thence, with a considerable part of the cavalrie. Calander was comd backe, and was with the Duke, and so was I ; bot upon the rout of Sir Marmaducks people, Calander got away to Ribble, where he arrivd safelie by a miracle, as I thinke ; for the enemy was betueene the bridge and us, and had killd or taken the most part of our tuo brigads of foot. The Duke with his guard of horse, Sir Marmaduke with many officers, among others myfelfe, got into Preston town, with intention to passe a forde below it, thogh at that time not rideable. At the entrie of the town, the enemy pursued us hard. The Duke faced about, and put tuo troops of them to a retreat ; bot so soone as we turnd from them, they turnd upon us. The Duke facing the second time, charged

them, which succeeded well. Being pursued the third time, my Lord Duke cryd to charge once more for King Charles. One trooper refusing, he beate him with his sword. At that charge we put the enemy so farre behind us, that he could not overtake us so soone. Then Sir Marmaduke and I entreated the Duke to haile him to his army; and truely he shewd here as much personall valour as any man could be capable of. We found the river, and so got to the place where Lieutenant Generall Baillie had advantageously lodged the foot on the top of a hill, among very fencible inclosures.

After Calander came to the infantry, he very unadvisedly sent six hundred musketeers to defend Ribble bridge; for the way Cromwell had to it was a descent from a hill that commanded all the champaigne, which was about an English quarter of mile in length betwene the bridge and that hill where our foot were lodged; so that our musketeers having no shelter, were forced to reload all the musketades of Cromwells infantry, which was secure within thicke hedges; and after the loss of many men, were forced to runne backe to our foot. Here Claud Hamilton, the Dukes Lieutenant Colonell, had his arme broke with a musket bullet. The bridge being lost, the Duke called all the Colonells together on horsebacke, to advise what was next to be done. We had no choyce but one of two, either stay and maintaine our ground till Middleton (who was sent for), came backe with his cavalerie; or els march away that night, and find him out. Calander would needs speake first; whereas by the custome of warre, he should have told his opinion last, and it was to march away that night so soone as it was darke. This was seconded by all the rest, except by Lieutenant Generall Baillie and myselfe. But all the arguments we used, as the impossibilitie of

a safe retreat from ane enemie so powerfull of horse, in so very foule weather, and extremelie deepe way, our sojors exceeding wet, wearie, and hungrie, the inevitable losse of all our amunition, could not move my Lord Duke by his authoritie to contradict the shamefull resolution taken by the major part of his officers. After that the drumles march is resolvd on, and bot few horse appointed to stay in the reare of the foot, I inquired what should become of our unfortunate amunition, since forward with us we could not get it. It was not thought fitt to blow it up that night, leaft thereby the enemie should know of our retreat or rather flight. I was of that opinion too, bot for ane other reason; for we could not have bloune it then, without a visible mischief to ourselves, being so neare it. It was ordaind it should be done three hours after our departure, by a traine; bot that being neglected, Cromwell got it all. Nixt morning we appeared at Wiggam Moore, half our number lesse than we were; most of the faint and wearie sojors haveing lagd behind, whom we never saw againe. Lieutenant Generall Middleton had misd us, for he came by ane other way to Ribble bridge. It was to be wishd he had still stayd with us. He, not finding us there, followd our tracke, bot hotlie purfued by Cromwells horse, with whom he skirmishd the whole way, till he came within a mile of us. He lost some men, and severall were hurt; among others Colonell Urry got a dangerous shot on the left side of his heade, wherof, though he was afterward taken prisoner, he recoverd. In this retreat of Middletons, which he managed well, Cromwell lost one of the gallantest officers he had, Colonell Thornton, who was runne in the breafe with a lance, wherof he dyed. After Lieutenant Generall Middletons comeing, we beganne to think of fighting in that moore; bot

that was found impossible, in regard it was nothing large, and environed with enclosures which commanded it; and these we could not maintain long, for want of that ammunition we had left behind us; and therefore we marched forward with intention to gain Warinton, ten miles from the moor we were in; and there we conceived we might face about, having the command of a town, a river, and a bridge. Yet I conceive there was but few of us thought we might be beaten, before we were masters of any of them. It was towards evening, and in the latter end of August, when our horse began to march. Some regiments of them were left with the reare of the foot; Middleton stayed with them; my Lord Duke and Calander were before. As I marched with the last brigade of foot through the town of Wiggam, I was alarmed that our horse behind me were beaten, and runne severall ways, and that the enemy was in my reare. I faced about with that brigade, and in the market place ferred the pikes together, shoulder to shoulder, to keepe up any shoulde charge, and sent orders to the rest of the brigades before to continue their march, and follow Lieutenant Generall Baillie, who was before them. It was then night, but the moone shone bright. A regiment of horse of our owne appeared first, riding very disorderly. I got them to stop, till I commanded my pikes to open, and give way for them to ride or runne away, since they would not stay. But my pikemen being demented, (as I thinke we were all,) would not heare me, and two of them runne full tilt at me. One of their pikes, which was intended for my belly, I gripped with my left hand; the other run me neere two inches in the inner side of my right thigh; all of them crying, that all of us were Cromwells men. This was an unreasonable wound, for it made me after that night unserviceable.

This made me forget all rules of modestie, prudence and discretion. I rode to our horse, and desired them to charge through these foot. They, fearing the hazard of the pikes, stood. I then made a cry come from behind them, that the enemy was upon them. This encouraged them to charge my foot so fiercely, that the pikemen threw down their pikes and got into houses. All the horse galloped away; and, as I was told afterwards, rode not thorough, but over our whole foot, treading them down; and in this confusion Colonel Lockheart was trode down from his horse, with great danger of his life. Though the enemy was neere, yet I beat drums to gather my men together. Shortlie after came Middleton, with some horse. I told him what a disaster I had met with, and what a greater I expected. He told me, he would ride before and make the horse halt. I marched, however, all that night, till it was faire day; and then Baillie, who had rested a little, intreated me to goe into some house and repose on a chaire; for I had slept none in two nights, and ate as little. I alighted, but the constant alarms of the enemies approach made me resolve to ride forward to Warinton, which was but a mile; and indeed I may say I slept all that way, notwithstanding my wound. I thought to have found either the Duke or Calander, or both heere, but I did not; and indeed I was often told that Calander carried away the Duke with him, much against his mind. Heere did the Lieutenant Generall of the foot meet with an order, whereby he is required to make as good conditions for himselfe and those under him as he could; for the horse would not come backe to him, being resolved to preserve themselves for a better time. Baillie was surpris'd with this, and looking upon that action which he was ordered to doe as full of dishonor, he lost much of that patience of which naturallie he was

mafter ; and befeechd any that wold to fhoot him thorough the head. At length, haveing fomthing compofd himfelfe, and much follicitd by the officers who were by him, he wrote to Cromwell. I then told him, that fo long as ther was a refolution to fight, I wold not goe a foot from him ; bot now that they were to deliver themfelvs prifoners, I wold preferve my libertie as long as I could, and fo tooke my leave of him, carrying my wounded thigh away with me. I met immediatlíe with Middletone, who fadlie condold the irrecoverable loffes of the tuo laft days. Within tuo hours after, Baillie and all the officers and fofors that were left of the foot, were Cromwells prifoners. I got my wound drefsd that morning by my oune furgeon, and tooke from him thefe things I thought neceffare for me, not knowing when I might fee him againe ; as indeed I never faw him after.

That unhappie day we met with Cromwell at Prefton, fome regiments of horfe, and our Irifh auxiliaries under the command of Sir George Monro (who were fífteene hundreth good foot and three hundreth horfe, and were appointed, againft all reafon of warre, to be conftantlie a days march behind us) all of them, I fay, finding the enimie had got betweene us and them, marchd ftraight backe to Scotland, and joynd with E. Lainricks forces. Bot fo foone as the news of our defeate came to Scotland, Argile and the Kirks partie rofe in armes everie mothers fonne ; and this was calld the Whiggamer rode. Da. Leslie was on their heade, and old Leven in the Caftle of Edinburgh, cannonading the royall troopes when they came in view of him. Yet might they have been all verie foone conjurd to be quiet, if the royalifts had not fuffered themfelves to be cheated by a treatie, by which they were obligd to lay down armes, and quite their power in civill and

militarie affaires. Bot the principall men of them, particularlie the Earles Lauderdale and Lainrick, Sir George Monro, Dalryell and Drummond, and others, found it not faife to trust the Saincts too much, and therfor crofd the seas, to take sanctuarie in Holland. Cromwell at Warinton sends Lambert with a sufficient cavalrie after us, and follows Monro with the strength of his armie to the Border, and there is invited by the Presbiterians to enter Scotland. He gets Berwick and Carlisle baselie yeelded to him ; and in one of them a number of English gentlemen who had servd the King ; ane infamous act ! He is feasted by old Leven, (peeress of one tree) in the Castle of Edinburgh ; which within tuo yeares after he made his oune. These men, who courted him, were so faithfull to the Covenant, that if fame wrong not some of them, they agreed with him in my Lady Homes house in the Canongate, that there was a necessitie to take away the Kings life. Now, for the good intertainment the Presbiterians had given this Arch Independent, at his returne to England, he left Lambert, (who had dispatched us before) with foure regiments of horse, to defend them against the Malignants (for so were honnest men called), till forces of their oune were raised, which was soone done. And then Acts of State and Kirke are made, to incapacitate all who had beene in England with the Duke, all who had abetted that engadgment, or had consented to it, from any office, charge or employment in State, Church, or Militia ; and numbers of honnest Ministers, upon that same account, turned out of their benefices and livelihoods.

To returne to the Duke in England. At night, after I left Warinton, when I came to him, all the resolution I found taken was, to march forward a day or tuo, and then by a turne to endeavour to get into

Scotland; for there was then no visible partie for the King in England to joyne with; Cromwell haveing, before he came to us, routed and broken all these who rose in Wales, and hangd many of the principal gentlemen of them. And Fairfax had broke all these who rose for the King in other counties, first under the Earle of Holland, and then under the Earle of Norwich, chaceing him and the remainder of them into Colchester, which, after a siege, was surrendered to him on discretion, as I thinke. Heere Sir Charles Lucas and Sir George Lile were cruellie dealt with, having bot two houres given them to prepare for death; and after that short time, by the instigation of wicked Ireton, Cromwells sonne in law, mercilesly shot dead.

The first day, then, of the Dukes march from that place where I found him, was to Whitechurch, (in what countie I do not remember.) There a great number of the countrey traind bands appeared against us, bot were quicklie put to flight by Middleton, without bloodshed. That day we marchd many miles, and at night most or all the horse lodgd in the field, where their horses fed well. Some officers went to houses; bot I lodgd at a hedge, and sleepd there so sound, that at break of day the trumpets could not waken me; that being the fourth night in which I had sleepd none, except on horsebacke. Nixt day we made a long halt at a countrey toun, I thinke in Staffordshire, called Stone. Heere, because we had not enemies enough to take our lives, a trooper killd his owne Ritmaster, one Patrick Grey, who had beene a captaine under me in my Lord Sinclars regiment. The trooper was in the place shot dead, by my Lord Dukes command; who, to speake truelie, was too spareing in taking lives, his clemencie occasioning the keeping very bad discipline the whole time of our march in England.

A litle after we had removd from that place, Lieutenant General Middleton making good the reare against some of the countrey militia troopes, was taken; his horse having fallen under him. He was carried to Stafford; and indeed, after that, we might trulie have said we were all prisoners; for I am sure enough, if he, or rather we, had escapd that misfortune, such unhappie accidents had beene prevented by him, which shortlie ruind us. And I know not bot he keeping us united, might not at a long runne have brought himselfe and most of us to Scotland. We came at night to Uxeter, in most tempestuous, windie, and rainie weather. Nixt morning, when we were on our march, a great unwillingness in the horsemen, and some of their officers to march further; the wearines of both man and horse, and irresolution whether to goe, and most of all, a fatalitie which pursud us, made the Duke turne backe, and take up his quarters in the same towne. Neither that day nor nixt night was any thing resolvd on, bot to rest and refresh man and horse, and then either treat with these forces that had surrounded us, or fight them and march away. Sir Marmaduk Langdale, and these few English who were with him, had left us at Uxeter. He was taken afterward, bot savd his life by escapeing out of prison. The Duke and Calander fell out, and were at very hie words at supper, where I was; each blameing the other for the misfortune and miscarriage of our affaires; in which contest I thought the Duke had the better of it. And heere, indeed, I will say, that my Lord Dukes great fault was in giveing E. Calander too much of his pouer all along; for I have often heard him bid him doe what he pleased, promiseing to be therewith well contented. And therfor Calander was double to be blamd, first for his bad conduct, (for that was inexcusable,) and nixt for

reproching the Duke with that whereof himfelfe was guiltie. To fill up the meafure of our miſfortunes, our troopers mutine againſt the Duke, Calander, and all their officers. Whether this proceeded of their owne wickednes, or by the inſtigation of ſome of their owne commanders, (which I then ſhrewdlie ſuſpected,) is uncertaine. The Duke and Calander are keepd priſoners, with ſtrong guards of the mutineers, all nixt night in the Dukes lodgeing, with many other officers, and among others myſelfe. Nixt morning, ſo ſoone as I could ſee, I cald over the window of the Dukes bedchamber to them, and aſkd them, if they were not yet aſhamd of the baſe uſage they had given their Generall, and of that contempt they had ſhown of all diſcipline, and of the ignominie of this action; and requird them, if for no other reaſon, yet for their owne ſafetie from the common enemie, to returne to their duetie, and goe home to their lodgings. Immediatlíe they removd their guards, and went to their ſeverall quarters, curſing in generall words theſe who had prompted them to the mutinie; which augmented my former ſuſpition, but it was no time to make a ſtrict inquire in the buſineſs. Shortlie after, Calander went away with as many as would follow him; which indeed were more than the halfe of theſe were in toun. No intreatie of the Duke or mediation of the officers could prevaile with him. I dealt particularlie with him, bot in vaine. He uſd many arguments to move me to goe along with him, bot I told him, if I keepd my life, I wold be one of the laſt men ſould ſtay with the Generall. I heard that not long after he was deſerted by all that went with him, as he had deſerted my Lord Duke. Yet he had the good fortune (which I believe no other officer of our armie had,) to get ſafe to London in a diſguiſe, and from thence to Holland.

I muſt remember heere, that the day after we returnd to Uxeter, there came ſome gentlemen of Staffordſhire with a trumpet from the governor of the towne to my Lord Duke, who ſhew his Grace, that in the time Middleton had ſervd the Parliament in the qualitie of Major Generall, he had done many good offices to both the town and the ſhire; and therefor to witneſs their thankfulnes, they were comd to intreate his Grace to permit them to carry Middletons ſervants, horſes and baggage to him at Stafford. This was readilie granted by the Duke, with his heartie thanks to the gentlemen for their ſo reaſonable kindnes. Standing by the Duke when this paſſed, I bethought myſelfe of ſending ſome moneys in Middletons coffers. There was a hundredth and fiftie pounds ſterline of it, which one of our commiſſaries had intreated me to cauſe ſome of my ſervants carry, becauſe in our tumultuarie march after Preſton, he knew not what to doe with it. Lieutenant Generall Middleton haveing taken 500 lb. ſterline from ſome other commiſſaries, upon that ſame account, I dealt with Middletons ſecretarie and his valet de chambre, to take my money with them; bot they both rudlie and obſtinatlie refuſd it, till I conjurd the uncivill humour out of them, with the pouverfull charme of tuentie pound ſterline, and then they found roome for the reſt of the money. Some of this I gave afterwards to our ſojors, who were priſoners at Stafford, and much I lent to indigent officers, and tooke notes from them for it, which I got occaſion to ſend to my wife in Scotland, who got thankfull payment afterward of much of it.

Calander being gone, there was ane abſolute neceſſitie impoſed on the Duke to capitulate with the Governor of Stafford, who had about 3000 of the countrey militia with him, with which we were ſurround-

ed. Sir James Foullis of Colinton, Colonell Lockheart and myfelfe are namd and commiffionated by my Lord Duke to treat. We met with the governour and fome of the principall gentlemen, three miles from Uxeter, at a very pleasant houfe in Staffordfhire, where, as they had told us, Mary Queene of Scots had beene long keepd prifoner. This with fuperftitious people wold have lookd ominous for us, who were of that nation. In our treatie, we found them very civill and rationall, and fo much friends to monarchie, that we had reafon to expect no bad conditions from them. Bot Fortune had not yet made peace with us. We are interrupted by a meffenger fent by Lambert, to acquaint both them and us that he was comd within tuo miles of that place, and that, if we wold treat, it muft be with him. Thefe were no good news, yet we prefentlie horfd and went to him. We found him very difcreet, and his expreffions civill enough. He appointed three principall officers to treat with us, wherof Lieutenant Generall Lilburn was one. After much difcourfe, they offerd to us, if we wold redeliver Berwick and Carlile to the Englifh Parliament, we fould be permitted to goe; nay, we fould be convoyd backe to Scotlande. We told them we had no pouer in our commiffion to fpeake of thefe tounes; and fo other articles were agreed on by us, bot not fignd till I fould goe firft to the Duke and show him, if he wold furrender thefe tuo touns, he and all with him fould have their libertie; if not, we were by the articles all prifoners. He abfolutlie refufd to engadge for the deliverie of thefe places, as a thing he faid was not in his pouer; juftlie fufpecting the Deputie Governors of the touns wold not obey his orders in the condition he was; and fo with many forrowfull expreffions difmiffd me. Upon the way as I returned, I met Lambert, with fome troops,

who told me he was goeing to save my Lord Duke from my Lord Grey of Groobie, who was marching towards Uxeter on the other side of the toune, which I knew before I came from the Duke to be true. He desired me by all meanes to hast the signing the articles, which he promised to ratifie. At my returne, I told my comerads what reason we had to make haste; and haveing reported the Dukes answer to the English officers, we all immediatlie signed the articles, which, indeed, if they had been malicious, they might have wadded; for whill we were about it, one Major Gib, an officer of our owne, came very unmanerlie into the roome, belching out his folly in these words: "Gentlemen, what doe ye dooe? The Duke and all who are with him are my Lord Greys prisoners." Yet the commissioners signed for all that; and indeed my Lord Duke was by that time prisoner, but Lambert tooke the protection of him; for our agreement was ratified by him, and by the Duke too, for he was not to be esteemed a prisoner, because taken in the time of a cessation and treatie, against custome of warre. Our first article was for the Duke, that he should onlie be a prisoner of warre, nor should his life ever be questioned or in danger. He should keepe his George; fixe of his servants, such as he should choose, should be permitted to attend him, and fixe of his best horses likewise; that in his prison accessse of all persons to him should be allowed;—conditions good enough, but very ill keepd. The summe of the rest of the articles was this: That all of us, both officers and souldiers, should be prisoners of warre, but civillie used, till we could procure our libertie by exchange or ranfome; that all of us should keepe the cloths we had on us, and all the gold and money we had about us, all other baggage, armes, and horses, should be bootie and prise to the victor. We three

who had capitulated, were orderd to be carried to Stafford, where Middleton was. The captain who conducted us thither got our horses and armes. As we rode thorough Uxeter, we made a stand at the window of the Dukes chamber; and he looking out, we tooke our eternall farewell of him, with sad hearts parting from him we were never to see againe. He spoke kindlie to us, and so we left him to act the last and worst part of his tragedie.

At Stafford, where were very many prisoners, we stayd, I thinke, seven or eight days; and then came a Ritmaster (who had beene a glover, and still keepd both the mine and manners of a mechanick,) with fortie horse, and ane order from Lambert to cary my Lord Cranston, Lieutenant Generall Middleton, Colonel Lockhart and myselfe, to Kingston upon Hull. One Major Craford, with much importunitie, got leave to goe along with his coufine Lockhart. We tooke our leave of our fellow prisoners, and of the governour, who had beene very civill to us; and so had all his officers, and the towns people likewise. This Ritmaster was a fellow of low qualitie, weake intellectualls, a violent Independent, a mortall enemie to the King, his familie and all monarchie; a persecutor of Presbitrie. For the rest of his endowments, we found him not ill natured; neither will I wrong him much if I bestow upon him the title of a foole. He furnishd horses for ourselvs and servants. My Lord Cranstoun had two servants allowd him; so had the Lieutenant Generall, Collonell Lockheart and I, each of us one. The Ritmaster and his litle troope was but ill mounted, and therfor gave us ease enough on our journey; neither was it unpleasant, except when the sad remembrance of our oune condition, and that of all honnest men, mixd too much water with our wine. On

the fifteenth of September, if I remember right, we arrivd at Hull. Our Ritmaster left us at Yorke, to whom, because he was not very uncivill, we gave tuentie five pounds sterline in gold, wherof my share was five. And heere I must make a litle stop, (for indeed I did so, staying there long enough,) and looke backe a litle.

It is a true saying, "Man propons, and God dispons;" neither is it in the pouer, or within the reach of the wit of weake man, to project a busieness with so much caution, or prosecute it with soe much industrie, prudence or courage, bot it may be blasted from Heaven, and renderd unsuccessfull by these contingencies which can neither be foreseeene nor prevented. The truth of this we found in this unhappie expedition. What was intended for the Kings reliefe and restoration, posted him to his grave. His sad imprisonment calld for assistance from all his loyall subjects, which as a duetie the laws both of God and man seemd to impose on them. Our hopes of success were great, grounded on the equitie of our just undertakeing, the prevailing of the royall partie in Ireland, the returne of most of the navie to their duetie and obedience, under the then Prince of Wales, now King; the numerous and loyall riseings of many shires in England and Wales, against that usurped pouer which keepd his Majestie in restraint, and upon our oune strength; for our armie was intended to have beene tuentie thousand foot, and fixe thousand horse and dragoons. Bot we never amounted to fourteene thousand in all. These were honnest and faire motives for that loyall and well intended engadgment of ours; bot,

*Ludit in humanis divina potentia rebus.*

The heavens brings things unto ane other end,  
Then that, for which blind man did them intend.

The Allmightie in his inscrutable will had orderd matters otherwise, and refusd a blessing to that unhappie armie; for the ruine and destruction wherof did contribute, as second causes, the mischievous retardment and obstruction Argile and his kirke so vigorouſlie made, which hinderd us to come time enough to joyne with the ſoutherne counties; Langdales unadvised and too sudden levies, and his unſeaſonable march to Lancaſhire, which obliged Lambert to come againſt him, and chace him to Carlile; which impoſd a neceſſitie on the Duke to march to his releefe, before he was halfe readie; the weaknes, rawnes, and undisciplindnes of our ſojors, our want of artillerie and horſes to cary the litle amunition we had, the conſtant rainie, ſtormie and tempeſtuous weather which attended us, which made all hie ways impaſſible for man and beaſt, our want of intelligence, our leaveing our Iriſh auxiliaries ſo farre behind us, and our unfortunate reſolution to wave Yorkſhire, and march by Lancaſhire; all which, being hinted at by me before, made us a prey to Cromwells veterane armie. Hence followd the alteration of the government in all the three kingdomes; the Kings execrable murther, who was brought from Cariſbroke Caſtle to Weſtminſter, is arraignd, impeachd, condemnd, and hath his heade ſtrucke off in the fight of the ſun at noontide of the day, at the gate of his oune palace of Whitehall; and the death and totall ruine of moſt of the royall partie.

Bot to returne to Hull. Colonell Robert Overton was governor there; a great Independent, who hath ſince had his ſhare of imprifonment, both under the Ufurper Oliver, and under his preſent Majeſtie; ſo it wold ſeeme he hath beene ane enemy to monarchie, whatever name it had, whether King or Protector. Civill and diſcreet he was,

had been at ane Inns of Court, was a schollar, bot a litle pedantick. He made us wellcome, and lodgd us tuo months in tuo severall inns, where we were well enough used for our money, and well enough guarded withall. Before the end of that time, my Lord Cranfton, by the mediation of his father in law Generall Leven, was first carried away from us to Newcastle, and thereafter fet at libertie. At the end of these tuo months, Middleton and Lockheart, by the intercession of their friends, likewise were carried to Newcastle; bot Major Craford was not permitted to goe with his coufine Lockheart. After that, Middleton got libertie to goe to and stay at Berwick, till his ladie was brought to bed there; when that was done, he made his escape to Scotland, which wold have cost him deare three years after, if he had not playd the same game, and escapt out of the Toure of London. Lockheart might have been releasd for some money; bot whether it was to spare that, or to enjoy the too acceptable societie of Paul Hobstone, he knows best. After they were gone, I am put in the Provost Marshalls hands, and Major Craford to beare me companie. I had, notwithstanding that I was in the common prison, which formerlie had beene the House of Correction, ane indifferent good chamber, and a good bed for myfelfe, and ane other for my servant. I was very strictlie guarded, and no lesse than five centries keepd constantlie about me. I learnd the alteration of my usage afterward, and the causes of it.

After Cromwell had left Lambert in Scotland, he marchd to Pomfret Castle; which Lieutenant Colonell Morris had surpris'd, and keepd then for the King, for which they hangd him afterward at Yorke. Whill I was prisoner at Hull, Cromwell besiegeth it, and sends for Overton to command in that service nixt to himfelfe. In the meane,

time, Argile and the Kirk being able to stand on their owne legs, dismissed Lambert with many thanks. He had beene very well entertained in Scotland, which made him so desirous to returne to it two yeares after. So soone as he came to Pomfret, Cromwell thought he spent his time not well in takeing a castle from the King, when he intended to take the heade from the King; left Lambert to reduce Pomfret, sends Overton back to Hull, and marchd directlie to London with the rest of his forces, to murder the best of Kings.

At the governors returne to Hull, he required me to plight my faith to him, by a revers under my hand, to be a faithfull prisoner, and not goe without the walls of Hull without his libertie. He brought me this message himselfe. I told him I was readie to doe it, provided he removed his guards from me; which he refuseing to doe, I shew him that if he tooke my parole or faith, he was obliged to trust me; for, *fides et fiducia sunt relativa*; and if he tooke my word for my fidelitie, he was obliged to trust it, otherwise it was needles for him to seeke it, and in vaine for me to give it; and therefore I beseechd him, either to give trust to my word, which I could not breake, or to his owne guards, who, I supposed, would not deceive him. In this manner I dealt with him, because I knew he was a schollar. He acknowledged all I said to be true, but withall he told me, I must either doe all he desired of me, or doe worfe. I prayd him to tell me what was that? He said he had order from his Lieutenant Generall, meaning Cromwell, to keep me in irons; but he thought the severenes of that command proceeded from the care he had I could not escape. The Governor himselfe conceavd, if he keepd me so well that he might present me to the Lieutenant Generall when I was calld for, he had made choyce of a way for it

more tolerable for me. He promis'd to befriend me as much as he could, without his owne prejudice, and so indeed he did ; bot affurd me any rough ufage I refflavd or might refflave, came out of Scotland. I then gave him what he demanded, with many thanks for not putting his order in execution. I could not then bot reflect upon the kind recommendation that Argile, or fome of that partie, had given to Cromwell of me ; and I make no doubt but if greater matters had not chaed the remembrance of me out of Cromwells mind, and fome mifunderstandings that arofe betueene him and his friends in Scotland, that they could not convenientlie put him in mind of me, fome greater mifchiefe then imprifonment had befallen me. Most of all these prifoners of warre that were in the common goale with me, were fhortlie after releas'd one way or other, and so was Major Craford also ; bot in all their roomes came Colonell Boynton, who had perfuaded his brother (thogh a great Independent) to declare himself and the Castle of Scarborough, wherof he was Governour, for the King. A fine young gentleman this was, had studied in one of the univerfities, was travelld, and well feene in historie and in the present state of Chriften dome. He and I were constantlie guarded with tuentie musketeers. The Marshall who had the principall government of us, was one Watfone, who had beene ane Alderman and wooll merchant in Dubline, and had broke for 25,000 lb. sterline ; he was afterward Marshall Generall in Scotland. He was civill enough to us, and after the Kings reftoration, I chanced to doe him fome favours at Edinburgh. He had a depute under him, one Lindale, one of these we call good honest men, or if you please, a fillie fimple fellow. Under him there was a third, called Standfield ; he was since a regiment marshall at Aire, and lives now at Newbotle in

Scotland. He was our turnkey, and lockd us in our severall chambers everie night. We dieted with him for eightene pence a meale for each of our selves, and eight pence for each of our servants. I payd for neere a twelvemonth a shilling sterline every night for my oun bed, and a groat for my mans ; a shilling everie day for coales, and a groat for candles, summer and winter. I had much comfort in Boyntons companie so long as he stayd, which was full six months ; and then he got his libertie on bond.

In the month of December, 1648, my wife came out of Scotland to me. I was extreamlie glad to see her, thogh very fory she fould have made so long a journey in so bad a time of the yeare. She had obtained in Scotland ane order from Lambert to Overton, to fend me to Neucaastle ; bot he excusd himselfe, in regard he had a later order from him who commanded over Lambert. Yet my wife, much against my will, wold needs goe to Lambert at Pomfret, where he ressavd her civillie, bot said it was not in his power to contradict his Lieutenant Generalls order. She returnd, after getting bad entertainment and lodgeing at Pomfret, and after a pitifull journey of threescore miles, in deepe and allmoft unrideable way, and in most stormie and rainie weather. She stayd about a month with me, much to my comfort ; and fore against her will returned to Scotland, whether I would have her goe to looke to our particular affaires. It is to be supposed we parted forroufullie, and so indeed we did ; yet not without hopes to see one aneother joyfullie againe, as it pleased God we did a twelve month after.

Haveing accustomd myselfe all my life over to be sometimes solitarie and retird, wherein I ever tooke much delight, I did not take my restraint so greevoullie as these would doe, who either will not or can-

not live without companie. And haveing the use of bookes, paper, pen and ink, I deceavd the longnes of the time with readeing and writeing. Withall, the Governour permitted me not onlie to goe to church, bot to walke sometimes on the toune walls, with one of my marshalls and tuo musketeers with me; some honnest royalists of the toune were permitted also to give me visites. Yet for all these comforts I came to the knowledge of some things (for I had the reading of all the Gazets and Diurnalls) which made my restraint more bitter and heavie to me than otherwise it wold have beene; for not to speake of the cruell usage I had in Scotland, men looking where any money of mine was to be got, and immediatlie seizd on, the difertion I met with of all my friends, yea my neereft relations, for these concernd onlie myfelfe; first, I heard how mercilesslie the present Committee of Estates, who had usurped the government, had used men of all ranks and qualities, who had given bot the least occasion to suspect their honestie and loyaltie; secondlie, the banishment of the peers of England out of the Upper House, and the extrusion, or as they calld it, the exclusion of the honnest members of the House of Commons, by Collonell Pride, at Cromwells command; which portended, thirdlie, the Kings execrable murther the 30th of Januare, 1649; fourthlie, the taking Duke Hamiltons heade of on a scaffold at Westminster in March after. They beheaded him as Earle of Cambridge, and so a Peere of England, without haveing any regard at all to the articles he had for life; bot in this I suppose Cromwell did nothing without advice from Scotland. Heere I can not bot bewaile the fate of that misfortunate Lord, who was a person of excellent qualities, of a great understanding, and good expressions, curteous, affable, humane; so mercifull that he was bot a bad

Justitiare, which I thought was a blemish in him ; one of the best masters to vassalls and tenants that our kingdom afforded. His constellation had inclined and appointed him to be a good statesman, and to be happiest in the enjoyment of his Prince his favour, the *summum bonum* of courtiers, but to be unfortunate in all his military employments both by sea and land. Most unhappy he was in his honour, which was branded most part of his life with foul aspersions of disloyalty and treachery ; neither will venomous tongues suffer his ashes to lie quiet, but cast dust upon them as if he had died as a fool. I had only the honour to know him when he was my general, and I believe he was faithful to his sovereign all his life ; but in the time he had the conduct of that unfortunate army, I dare swear the deepest oath for his fidelity and loyalty, and that he intended nothing but the full restoration of the King, for whom he died a martyr. Immediately after him were beheaded on that same scaffold, E. Holland and the brave Lord Capell. Fifthly, as I was glad to hear of Lieutenant General Middleton's escape out of Berwick, and that he was upon the head of a royal party in the north of Scotland ; so it was grievous to me to hear that, in his absence from that party, most of it was routed and beaten by Ker and Strachan, and himself forced to be contented with an assurance that he might live at home in peace ; so little did that rising contribute to the present King's service. Sixthly, I could not but be exceedingly grieved to hear all the canons about the walls of Hull shot, and see bonfires made in the streets, for joy of that victory. Colonel Michael Jones had got, by a desperate fall out of Dublin, of the Marquis of Ormond and all his numerous army, even when he was absolutely master of all Ireland except Dublin, Dundalk, and Londonderry ; and

at that time too when Cromwell was readie with ane armie at Milford haven to croffe over to Ireland, to pursue that victorie, and reduce that kingdome to the Parliaments obedience, as he did. Seventhlie, I was sorry to heare, that any thing might have been done for the King in Scotland, was totallie obstructed by the irreconcilable animosities betuene Duke William Hamilton and the Marquesse of Montrosse at the Haag, where they were both with the King; as also that his Majestie, in steade of goeing to Ireland, which might have been preserved, was perswaded to goe see his mother in France; from whence he went to Jersey, where he winterd in the yeare 1649, till ane addresse from the governing partie in Scotland brought him out of it to Breda, there to treat with his Scots Commiffioners. I confesse that all these sad intelligences comeing on the necke of other, did much afflict my spirit, yet not so much bot that I still hopd to live and see ane alteration; for after a great storme, of necessitie a calme must follow.

Overton had promisd, that so soone as Cromwell went out of England, he wold propose some way for my libertie. So soone, then, as he was arrivd in Ireland, I put my Governor in mind of his promise. He adviseth me, in regard Watfons my marshall was goeing to London about his oune affaires, I sould give him some moneys, for which he wold oblige him to agent my busines according to his direction, which was this. A friend of his, one Colonell Nidam, was killd in the Parliaments service, and had left his wife very poore. She sould petition the Parliament to give her a prisoner, for whose libertie she might get some money. He said there was no doubt bot the Parliament wold referre the petition to Generall Fairfaxe, and then he wold deale with Mr Clerke, (who was then Fairfaxes secretarie under Rushworth,

since knighted by the King, and killd at sea,) that I should be the man, if I would satisfie the widow. I humbly thankd him for this very kind proffer, and readily accepted of it. The Governor writes to London with Watfone, who stayd ten weekes, mostly at my charges. The Governor had cast up a right account; for a letter is obtained to him from Fairfaxe to set me at libertie, I giving my paroll to goe beyond seas, and not to returne to any of the three kingdomes for a yeare, but not one word of money. I am presently taken out of my prison house, my guards removed, and I accommoded in that inn where first we were lodged when we came to Hull; the best inn of the town.

The next day I went to Overton, both to give him my real thanks for this superlative favour, as also to know what he would appoint me to give the widow and Mr Cleark; for though there was mention made of none of them in his Generalls order, yet I intended not to be ungrate, or omit to pay that duetie I owed to both. He askd me what I would bestow on each of them? I told him, fiftie pounds on the widow, and ten on Mr Cleark. He replyd it was too much, and therfor he would save me fiftene pounds of that sounge; for the widow should have but fortie, and Mr Cleark five. This I presently paid; neither would Overton suffer me to present either himselfe or his ladie with any token of my thankfulness. This was the most courteous Independent I ever met with. My marshall and his deutes I satisfied so well, that they did not complaine of me. Moneys were furnishd me not onlie for this, but for all my charges the whole time of my imprisonment, by one Master Key, who that yeare was shrieve of the town. They were repaid to him by David Wilkie, a merchant of Edinburgh, they two having beene well acquainted together in Spaine. Mr Key and

some other honnest Royalists of the toune had given me severall visits, when I was in the Provost Marshalls companie, bot there we might not speake bot before one of my keepers ; bot when I came to lodge in the inne, they and I conversed freely together, to both our great satisfactions.

I resolvd to be gone with the first ship went from Hull, whatever place of Christendome she was bound for, feareing I might be stopd by some new order. Sixe weeks after, a cloth ship made saile for Hamburg with a convoy of threttie guns. In the convoy were some merchants belonging to that staple, all men for the new Commonwealth. I wold not goe with them, but went in the cloth ship, where one Master Robbiesone was master, ane honnest and well principld man. We went doune the Humber, at the mouth wherof we met with a very faire wind, which in foure dayes time put us in the mouth of the Elve ; and as we went up that river, I found a gret change since the time I was there before, about Geluctstad, a toune of the King of Denmarks ; his block houses there, whereby he had exacted toll of all ships that passd, being demolishd, by vertue of ane article of the peace he had made with Sueden, after foure yeares unfortunate warre. That article was made by the instigation of the citie of Hamburg, which had notable affited the Sueds against their lord and protector the King of Denmark. Two days after, we arrivd and landed at that rich and flourishing citie.

Among other favours I reffaved from Colonell Overton, Governour of Hull, this was not the least, that he permitted me the use of all the bookes the stationers of that place could afford, for which I payd them money weeklie ; and, which I valued more, he allowd me the use of pen,

paper and inke ; which were tuo very comfortable and profitable divertifements to me in that affliction. Heere it was where I wrote fome collections of the ftate of Europe, from the yeare 1618, that the dreadful comet appeared, till the year 1638, that the Scots Covenant appeared in the world, which produced as fad and lamentable effects as that comet did. Heere I wrote alfo [fome] effays and difcourfes, and that with fo much confidence and freedome, as if I had beene at my full libertie, that I am fure if Overton had perufd them, he had found fo much fpoke to the difadvantage of his mafters of the new Commonwealth, that he wold have given a ftop to my releafment. Bot he fufferd me to cary all my papers with me untouchd and unfeene by himfelfe or any other. And fo I tooke my leave of him, and of Hull alfo, in the beginning of November 1649, after I had beene prifoner fourteene months or thereby.

**MEMOIRS OF SIR JAMES TURNER;**

**PART SECOND,**

**WHEREIN ARE CONTAINED**

**THE REMARKABLE PASSAGES OF HIS LIFE**

**FROM HIS RELEASMENT OUT OF PRISON AT HULL,**

**IN OCTOBER 1649, TILL NOVEMBER 1663.**



## SIR JAMES TURNER'S MEMOIRS.

---

WHEN I arrivd at Hamburg out of Hull in November of the year 1649, I found a number of Scotch gentlemen who either had servd the late King, or intended to serve the present one, attending the orders and motions of the famous Marqueffe of Montrose ; who haveing trusted too much to Vlefeld the Great Steuart of Denmarks promises of assistance, found himselfe disappointed by that faithles minister of estate, who afterwarde went faire to betray both his prince and countrey. This obliged the Marques to retire himselfe to Gottenburg in the Suedish dominions, where he was underhand supported, bot very inconsiderable, by the great Queene Christina. If I had beene provided then with moneys, without which I could put myselfe in no equippage, I had runne the hazard of goeing to Scotland with the rest who accompanied the Marqueffe, shortly after, in that last misfortunate and fatall expedition of his. Bot I could be master of no money till I came to Holland ; and therfor by my letter offerd my service to my Lord Marques, which the Lord Napier was pleasd to send under his couvert, and to which I had a very favorable returne, and invitation from the Marques to come to him, writ with his oune hand.

I went by land to Holland, accompanied with Colonell Sibbald, who carried letters from Montrose both to Scotland and Ireland. From Roterdame I wrote with him to my wife at Edinburgh, to furnish him with a considerable peece of money, (for he was not well stored,) which she did ; and he had his heade chopd of not long after at the Croffe of Edinburgh ; so I losd both my friend and my money. My wife, in a stormie and tempestuous winter, gave me a visite in Holland ; and having furnishd me with what I most stood in need of, returnd with much trouble and danger to Scotland. I paid the rest of the winter in visiteing the best places in Holland ; and in March of the yeare 1650, went to Breda to attend the treatie betueene the King and his Scottish subjects ; the issue wherof was a gracieous condiscendence of his Majestie to all or most of their demands ; and with them he went to Scotland, accompanied with severall Lords, who after his arriveall were removd from him, and himselfe so used as I wish posteritie may never know.

I then put on a resolution to goe to Sueden, and under a notion to seeke some arreares were due to me, to see the glorie of the Suedish Court, and the magnificence of Christinas coronation. I arrivd at Elfennure, where finding the wind turne contrare for some days, I alterd my resolution ; and haveing seene the King of Denmark and his Court at Copenhagen, his statelie palace of Frederichsburg, and his strong castle of Cronenburg, I returnd to Holland, after I had endurd a horrible tempest at sea. I intended then to have gone to France, bot the late Earle of Southeske, then Lord Carnegie, perswaded me to accompanie him to Scotland. We landed the very night before Cromwell beate the Scottish armie at Dumbar. My Lord and I found, that the persecution of these who had assented to, or acted in Duke Hammiltons engadgment,

as it was calld, was as hote as ever; which obliged us that very night to depart the toune, and take up our lodgeing with a gentleman six miles from Aberdeene, where we had landed. My Lord and I parted at his fathers houle of Kinnaird.

I went privatlie to Fife, where I had the comfort to meet with my deare wife, who haveing put her best things in the Castle of Edinburgh, and left the rest to their hazard, came and livd with me that winter at Difart.

About this time, the monstrous Remonstrance was hatchd; and if Lambert had not, by good fortune to us all, beaten Colonell Ker at Hammilton, I beleeeve the King had beene just as safe at St Jonston, as his father was at Westminster. The desperate condition of affaires movd some of the best naturd of the Presbiterian cleargie to thinke of some meane, to bring as many hands to fight against the publike enemy as was possible; and therfor, notwithstanding all their acts of Assemblies and Commissions of the Kirk to the contrary, they declared all capable of charge in State or Militia, who would satisfie the Church, by a publike acknowledgment of their repentance for their acceffion to that finfull and unlawfull Engadgment. The King commanded all who had a mind to serve him, to follow the Churches direction in this point. Heerupon Duke Hamilton, the Earles of Craufurd and Lauderdaill, with many others; were admitted to Court, and numbers of officers refaved and put in charge, and entrusted with new levies. My guilt in affronting the Ministrie, (as they calld it) in the person of Mr Dick at Glasgow, and my other command in the West, retarded my admiffion very long; bot at length I am absolved, and made Adjutant Generall of the Foot; and after the misfortunate rencounter at Innerkeithen,

•

had once more Lieutenant Generall Holburns regiment given me by his Majesties command.

Behold a fearfull finne! The Ministers of the Gospell refflavd all our repentances as unfained, thogh they knew well enough they were bot counterfeit; and we on the other hand made no scruple to declare that Engadgment to be unlauffull and finfull, deceitfullie speakeing against the dictates of our oune consciences and judgments. If this was not to mocke the allknoweing and allseeing God to his face, then I declare myselfe not to know what a fearefull finne hypocrisie is.

The defeate of that part of the armie at Innerkeithen, Cromwells march with most of his forces to St Jonston, whereby he cut of all succour of men and meate from the North, obliged the King, with the advice of the Committee of Estates, to lay present hold on occasion to leave the rebell behind him, and march with his whole armie from Stirling into England. The horse and dragoons might be about foure thousand; and the foot, as I reckond them that day we marchd from Stirling parke, were upwards of nine thousand. A trainé of artillerie of some field peeces and leather canon we had, with futeable amunition; under the conduct of Sir James Wemis Generall of the Artillerie. We got quicklie to English ground, bot with a great deale of mischief to all these poore Scotch people by whose dwellings we marchd, robbing and plundering being used by the sojors, even to admiration and inhumanitie. Neere to Carlile, the King is proclaimd King of England and Ireland, with the great acclamations of the armie; and severe commands made against all other robberies, plunderings and exactions; which being put in execution by hanging tuo or three, were well enough observed, and very good order and discipline keepd the whole march.

•

I will not amuse myfelfe to relate all the particulars, circumstances, or miscarriages of this unfortunate expedition, my intention being to speake of what befell myfelfe till this present yeare of God. In that armie I was Colonell of foot, and Adjutant Generall; and with no better fortune then I had when I exercd these charges in the yeare 1648.

Lambert and Harriesone being beaten from Warinton bridge, and all their Cheshire foot chaced away from them, the King declind to march straight to London, from which upon his approach it was thought the Parliament wold have removd to Windsor; and so we went straight to Worcester, where we lay till Cromwell came and faced us; and after three or foure days respite, in which time he gathered a great bodie of the countrey traind bands, to the number of five and tuentie thousand at least, besides his veteran armie; and then he forced us to fight on the third day of September, with a great deale of disadvantage both for ground and numbers, bot with much greater misfortune.

Heere was the gros of the royall armie routed; some great officers escapd, and three thousand horse with them; which bodie might have, no doubt, made a second warre in Scotland, bot falling in peeces by bad conduct, they came everie mothers sonne in the pouer of the enemy. His Majestie, by the good hand of God, escapd safelie, and was preservd to be a blessing to his three kingdomes. The manner how, and what way he got out of England to France, notwithstanding all the means the rebells ufd to get him in their pouer, may be seene in the historie of his life written by Edward Philips.

Many thousands were carried away prisoners to London, to give

the people ane assured demonstration of Cromwells unquestionable victorie. Among the rest I was one. At or neere Oxford, the Marshall Generall (who indeed was as civill as a man of his charge could be,) exacted from the Lords, Officers and Gentlemen, who were prisoners, a parole and reveſe ſignd with their hands, to be faithfull prisoners, which moſt of all willinglie did ; bot Generall Dalyell, and Lieutenant Generall Drummond knowing I intended to endeavour my eſcape, reſuſed to ſigne, leaſt I, being the onlie perſon that wold not ſubſcribe it, might have beene the worſe uſed. The ſecond night of our ſtay at Oxford, with the helpe of our hoſte, a barger, a barbour, and a ſhoe-maker, I got out of the top of the houſe, and thorough ane other voyd houſe, eſcapeing all our guards both of horſe and foot, not without obſtructions and ſome merrie paſſages, the memorie wherof was afterwards pleaſant, thogh then I runne twice the neere hazard of breakeing my necke. I lay tuo days and nights in the garret of a new houſe, which had neither doore nor window in it. The ſearch, which was not very ſtrict, being over, and the priſoners with their guards prettie well advanced towards London, I creepd out of my retreat, and in a very pitiefull diſguiſe, accompanied with halfe a dozen of watermen, (who had all ſerved the late King as ſojors,) tooke my journey ſtraight to London. The firſt day I walkd afoot to Morley, which was tuentie miles from Oxford ; but my feet were ſo ſpoiled with the clouted ſhoes which I wore, and myſelf ſo wearie, that my companions were forced to carry me almoſt the laſt tuo miles. Luſtie, ſtrong and loyall fellows they were, bot extreamlie debauchd. They miſd not one alehouſe in the way, and my paying for all the ale and beere they dranke (for I thanke God they wold drinke no wine,) did not at all

trouble me ; but it was a vexation to me to drinke cup for cup with them, els they fould have had no good opinion of me, and to them I was neceffitated to reveale myfelfe, my honneft barger goeing before us all the way a horfebacke, and fo ferving us for a scout. At Morley I hird ane old carkaffe of a horfe from a knaveifh old fellow, who made himfelfe exceeding merrie with me, jeering me verie broadlie ; and indeed I was in fo wofull a plight that I was ridiculous enough, neither could any man have conceavd that ever I had beene ane officer in any armie of the world. On horfebacke I came from Bramford, thretteene miles from Morley, and feven from London, and rode thorough at leaſte tuo hundreth red coates that had convoyd my countrey-men to Titlefield ; bot was well ſeconded in paſſing them by my truſtie comerades, the watermen. At Bramford I tooke oares, and in the night time landed at Weſtminſter ſtaires, which I had never ſeene ; for I came in ane evill houre to London, where I had never beene before. I was lodgd that night with ane honneft Welchman, to whom my barger reveald what I was, that he might make me knoune to ſome of the Royal lpartie, for I had no acquaintances in that great citie.

After I had repoſed myfelfe tuo days, wherof I ſtood in great need, ſome clothes, linnens and a litle money, were ſent me by three honneft men, and brought to me by my hoſte. The clothes I accepted, bot refuſd the money, and nixt night I was brought by water to the citie, to the three gentlemen who had ſent me ſo fure tokens of their kindnes, and whom I had never ſeene all my life before. Three loyall perfons they were, who, after they had made themſelvs knoune to me, they deſired a particular rehearſeall of the King's miſfortunate expedition, and his loſſe at Worceſter ; which they heard with as grievd hearts

as I related it. They thought it fit to lodge me in a publike inne within the citie, and entrusted me to the care of the drawer, who was both ane honest and ane understanding fellow. That house I changed, and so did I many others, till I lighted on the house of ane honest widow, who had no creature in the house with her bot her oune daughter ; and there indeed I was as secure as if I had beene in my mothers house. Severall appointments were made betueene my three noble friends and me, and all punctuallie keepd. Their kindness I can never forget, unles I intend to accuse myselfe of the higheft ingratitude. They entrusted me with a message to the King, wherein his Majestie was neerlie concernd, which I faithfullie deliverd to him at Paris.

Immediatlie after the first time I had spoke with these three Royallists, I went back to Westminster, to take my leave of my honest barger and watermen, who had by that time ended their busieness ; for the watermen were led as witnesses of a ryot, alledged to have beene committed by the barger, and if the matter was referd to their oath, I need not doubt bot he was assoyld, let his guilt be what it wold. I was given out all the way from Oxford to be a witnesse also ; I was borne in a countrey village in Oxfordshire, where I had never seene or learnd any good manners or breeding ; and I was called Richard, or Dicke ; bot I changed that and five or six more names before I got out of London. After I had drunke a dozen of beere with them, I offerd everie one of them a tuentie shilling peece of gold as a token of my thankfullnes, bot I could not for my heart persuade any of them to take it ; onlie I movd each of them to take halfe a croune, wherwith they said they wold drinke my health in their returne to Oxford ; and so after many embraces we parted. The like honestie I met with at Oxford before ;

for neither my barbour nor shoemaker wold, for any intreatie of mine, take either gold or moneys from me; bot they tore away all the ribbands that were on my clothes, and said they wold weare them till the Kings restoration, which they said they were sure wold be nixt yeare. Colonell Prides sonne haveing given me faire quarter when he tooke me, I had savd some of my gold; and when I made my escape, Generall Dalzell had lent me ten peeces, one wherof I gave to my hostesse at Oxford, when she lighted me to the garret of her house; and other I gave to the bargers wife as a token. Sixe I spent in my tuo days journey to London; the rest maintaind me well enough till I was supplyd out of Scotland.

When I went abroad, I did it either by coach or water; for the streets were full of Scotfmen, especiallie sojors, who might have wrongd me with unseasonable kindnes. For the most part I keepd my chamber; and then I had time and leisure enough to reflect on the deplorable condition of the King and all the Royall familie, of the three kingdomes, especiallie my native countrey of Scotland, now reduced to a province by the most insolent of Rebels. But, *proximus esto tibi* is so true a saying, and so agreeable to mother Nature, that . . . . . and therefore I seriousslie considered the evill aspect of my oune particular affaires, the many tryalls and afflictions I had met with in the course of my life, and what a great one I had now to wrastle with, my wife haveing beene in Dundee when it was taken, a world of blood spilt in it, the toun sackd and plunderd. This I knew at Oxford, but did not, nor could not, learne what had becomd of my deare wife, till three weeks after my comeing to London; and then I was certainlie informed that she had savd nothing of all she had of moneys,

clothes and mooveables, except the cloths she had upon her ; bot that her life wes saved, and that she was returned on foot to Disart. I was exceedingly comforted to heare that her life was given to us as a prey, for which mercy I bleſd God. The miſfortune of dolefull Dundee fell on the firſt day of September, and ours in England on the third therof. My wife and I, by our mutuall letters, underſtanding of each others wellfare, I recommended her to the divine Providence, who in his oune good time wold bring us together againe.

I durſt not hazard to goe out of England, till it was knoune that his Majeſtie was ſafelie arrivd at Paris. The ſearch then not being ſo ſtrict, I reſolved to be gone either for Holland or France. I had keepd a conſtant correſpondence with Lieutenant Generall Middletone, then priſoner in the Toure, by Major Strachan, now Sir John Strachan. I ſtill aſſurd him, for my intelligence by my Engliſh friends was very good, that his life wold be taken, ſo ſoone as he was cured of a ſhot he had reſſavd in his bodie ; and therfor had layd doun three ways for his eſcape ; one of them being by a falſe key to open his chamber doore (whill Strachan ſould be drinking with the keeper in ane alehouſe,) and diſguiſed in a blacke ſute of apparrell, with a periwig of red haire, to walke at all leiſure out of the Toure, accompanied with Captaine Hay, (who was bot ſlenderlie rewarded for this faithfull ſervice,) and ſo ſould goe to the lodgeing I had provided for him. This way, I ſay, was that wherby he obtaind his libertie. The pretence they had to put him to death was, that he had broke his parole in eſcapeing out of priſon at Berwick, as they alledged. He pretending not to be guiltie of this alledged crime, his neereſt friends not feareing his life, prevaild with him not to hazard the loſſe of his eſtate in Scot-

latid, which wold be assuredlie forfeited if he broke out of prison. Upon this advice he sent me a message by Major Strachan, shewing me his resolutions, and desired me to put mysele to no further hazard for him, bot be gone as soone as I could to the King. He sent me a memoriall of what I was to say to the King from him, as also to all his friends at Paris. I was trulie sorry to see him so easilie perswaded to put his life in so needles a hazard ; bot seeing my stay was to no purpose, I prepar'd to make my escape out of England, as I had done out of Oxford. To this did exceedingly help me, a passe which one Mr Harrie Knox, an expectant minister, had got by the Countesse of Devonshires meanes, from the pretended Councell of State. He altering his resolution of going to France, gave me the passe ; and after I had stayd three or foure nights with a sister of mine in Kentshire, I came to Dover, accompanied with one Master Simfone, a brother of my brother in laws. I was more strictlie lookd to and examin'd then was ordinarie ; and one James Tours, a Scotsman duelling there, was brought to see and speake with me. He was like to undoe me with questions. I found it was necessare to try his honestie ; for imprisonment was the worst could befall me, haveing never broke either word or writ ; for I thinke faith shold be keepd to the worst of men. Whill the Governor Colonell Temple was boweing his heade to spit, I gave Mr Tours a signe wherby he might soone know I was not the true Mr Harie Knox. He provd ane honest man, and indeed savd me, by not putting me to anfuere any more hard interrogatories. In a word, Colonell Temple could find me neither gentleman, minister, sojourner, or merchant ; bot a servant to the old Earle of Morton, which James Tours knew well enough to be a ly.

The matter was this. Middleton had escapd out of the Toure the day before, and thefe at Dover haveing never feene him, and tuo hundred pounds being offerd to any that could find him out, wold needs have me to be him. Bot being cleard of that very groffe errour by Mr Tours, I was fufferd to paffe with the packet boate. My Ladie Middleton haveing found by fome discourfes with Sir Arthur Hafelrig, and Lamberts ladie, the truth of that I had fo often averd, that they intended to put her husband to death, advifd him to fly and fave his life ; which he did, as I fhew a litle before. I had acquainted Major Strachan with the miftres of my houfe, and ſhe promifd to make the gueft I entrusted to her very wellcome ; and ſafe enough he was all the time he ſtayd in London, thogh the ſearch was ſtrict enough was made for him. He pafd under the name of Maſter Anderſone, and Major Strachan was at that time Andro Reid. I had entrusted none bot him, my brother in law, and the miftres of the houfe with the ſecret.

I had a letter to the King from the imprifond minifters, Middletons Memoriall, and ſome other papers of concernment, all which I clofd by way of packet in a ſheet of paper, and gave them to James Tours to put in the boxe. They were directed to “ Jacques Broune à Calais ;” for I was to have that name at Paris, and all letters to me to be directed ſo. Nixt day when I arrivd at Calais, I went to the poſt houſe and paid eight ſous for my owne packet. I had imparted to Mr Simſone Middletons eſcape, what hand and concern I had in it, conjurd him to haſte to London, affureing him he wold find him at my old lodgeing ; and withall I gave him my paſſe to carry him, which might ſerve Middleton to good uſe, provided he did not touch at Dover, which I beſeechd him not to doe. Maſter Simſone went away

that night, after he had seene me boated, found Middletone in the appointed place, and did him very great service ; and indeed was the man that lodgd him at his fathers house in the countrey, five or fixe days, till he had agreed with a boate to carry him to France. Bot the master haveing got foure pounds in earnest, cheated them ; yet Master Simsone prepar'd and agreed with ane other vessell, the master wherof proveing honnest, landed Middletone and Major Strachan safelie in Normandie.

I made short stay at Calais, goeing with the first messenger, day and night, in a pitifull cold season, to Paris ; where, haveing kisd the Kings hands, I deliverd all my messages to him. I was graciousslie reffayd by his Majestie, and wellcomd by all my friends and acquaintances. Not long after, Lieutenant Generall Middletone arrivd, who sent for me before his comeing was knowne. I stayd a night with him, and nixt day brought my Lord Neuburgh to him, and the day after that, he went to Court at the Louver, where he had a most gracious reception from his Majestie, and a heartie wellcome of all attended him. The Marques of Ormond, and Sir Edward Hyde, then Chancior of the Exchequer, made up a knot of friendship with him, which I beleeve be yet to unty. This was displeasing to many who lov'd none of those tuo ; for even then was this litle Court divided into factions and fractions.

Within a few weeks after his comeing, I retir'd to a private house in the fauxbourg or suburbe of Saint Antonie, from the companie of all my countrey-men, that I might learne some French ; the readeing, writeing, and understandeing which language I had, without any other helpe bot that of a grammar and dictionarie, studied during my impri-

sonment at Hull in the yeare 1649. Heere I stayd ten or twelve weeks, till both the King of France and the Prince of Condes armies drawing neere that place where I lodged, made me retire into the Citie; bot not before I saw the Prince his forces, after a stout resistance, beaten into the Port of Saint Anthonie; which being shut, they had in all probability beene sacrificed to Cardinal Mazarinis just revenge, if the Duke of Orleans had not forced the gunners of the Bastile to discharge all their canon against his master and nephew the King of France, who was personally present with his armie; and that his daughter Mademoiselle, had not, with her viragolike presence and eloquence, cajold the burgeses guards so well, that without consent of the magistrats, they opened the port, and suffered the Prince and the forces he had with him to march thorough the citie, and crosse the river of Sein at the New bridge.

Before this, the Archduke Leopold, taking his advantage, whilst the King of France his suer is draune in his owne defence against the neereft Princes of his blood, marchd to Estampes, five leagues from Paris, yet did no great feats. Charles Duke of Lorraine marchd also with a flying armie of ten thousand men to Charenton, two leagues from Paris, with a resolution to joyne with the Princes. Him Marshall Turenne faced; bot whilst they prepare to fight, the King of Great Britaine mediates a truce, and obtaines it, by which the Duke was obliged to march speedilie out of France, and not to returne to it for fourteene days; and so the Lorrainer marchd backe againe, plundering all before him according to his custome. This good office done to the French King, procurd to ours the evill will and hatred of his neereft kinred; for indeed it ruind the Prince of Conde, and it stirrd

up againſt his Maſteſty the populace, who breathd nothing ſo much as the deſtruction of Mazarini; even ſo farre as it was not ſafe for the King to entruſt himſelfe longer in the Louver, or for his followers to ſtay longer in Paris. The Palace of St Germans in the Lay is by the King of France his command provided for him. Thither he goes with the Queene his mother, and his ſiſter Princeſſe Henrietta; for the Duke of Yorke before that, had gone to Mareſhalle Turenne to look after adventures, and perſite the ſkill he allreadie had in the militarie art. Moſt of theſe who attended the Court followd him; and I accompanied thither General Middletone. We went by boate, and in great danger of robbers and voleurs, the river being but narrow, and the tuo armies on both ſides of it. He had, a litle before that, got a comiſſion to be Captaine Generall of all his Maſteſties forces in the kingdom of Scotland; and he was to haſten to Holland and other places, where he might expect any aſſiſtance of moneys from well affectionate Scottſmen, wherwith to provide armes and amunition for theſe who were allreadie afoot for the King in the Hielands.

I was appointed by him to goe to the Low Countreys before him, and waite his comeing at the Haag; bot I was neceſſitated to ſtay till the true Maſter Harie Knox (who had beene ſent with letters to the King from the priſoners in the Touer) was diſpatchd; and that could not be done in a ſhort time, being ſome of the priſoners, and the Chiefes of theſe who were in armes in the hills, wold be ſatiſfied with no letters bot ſuch as were all writ with the Kings ounge hand. He being diſpatchd, and I haveing kiſſd the Kings hands, Sir John Keith, brother to the Earle Marshall, David Ramſay, Mr Knox and I, made a pleaſant journey in the beginning of September 1652 to Rowen, where I had a

care to see Mr Haries papers so well packd up in shoes and slippers, that they were bot in small hazard of any discoverie. He went for England, and deliverd all his letters and instructions, many of which were sent to the hills, bot neither in one place or other did these papers, which the King had writ with so much trouble, produce the wished effect of union, bot in the contrare disunited men of one interest ; which may be imputed to the perfidious wrong superscriptions, interlineings and misdeliveries of his Majesties letters ; all which the late Chanclor of England, the Earle of Clarendon, did in the yeare 1660, a little before the King was proclaimed in England, in a long discourse with me at Breda, lay at my Lord Balcarris doore, how trulie, I shall not judge.

Sir Johne Keith and I went from Rouen by land to Diepe, from that by sea to Calais, where finding a little vessell readie bound for Flushing, we embarked that night. Nixt morning, passing by Dunkirke, we were examin'd by ane Admirall of a Spanish fleet, which keepd that toune blockd up by sea. There we saw two great guns fire often from a batterie at land against the toune ; for Leopold haveing taken Graveline, had besiegd Dunkerke also, then keepd by the French. It was not long after surrenderd to him, wherin the English were very instrumentall ; for the Duke of Vendosme being sent by the French King with a strong navie, in which he carried recruits of men, moneys, victualls and amunition, the English, farre too strong, set upon him, and carried his fleet to England ; and after Dunkirk had yeelded to the Spaniard, they released the ships, and landed all their men in French ground.

Sir Johne Keith and I being dismiss'd by the Spanish Admiral, landed

that night at Flushing. From thence we went to Roterdame, where we found my Ladie Middletone with much longing expecting her husband. She had her brother with her, Major Durhame, afterwards a titular Colonell, Sir Alexander Durhame, and Lyon King of Armes. When I was at Amsterdame about some particular buſienes, my Ladie had a meſſage from Breda, that her husband the Generall was arrived there, very ſick of a tertian. She went thither; and not long after, I came to him at that ſame place. Within a month he was in a capacitie to make diſpatches; and I was ſent with a commiſſion from him, and many letters from the King, to ſome places in Low Germanie, to ſeeke the aſſiſtance of ſuch Scotch gentlemen as I had formerlie been acquainted with in the German warre. In all theſe journeys, I was my owne purſemaſter; and ſpending my owne, I found myſelfe countable to no man. I began my journey the firſt of November, 1652; a very bad time of the yeare to travell day and night with a poſte. In Februaire nixt I returnd to the Generall, bringing with me fifteene hundreth dollars. In Aprile 1653, I was ſent backe to ſome other places; and that ſummer I reſſaved three thouſand foure hundreth dollars, which I ſent to the Generall by bill of exchange, retaining for my charges ſo much as he was pleaſd to allow me. What I had done encouragd him to ſend his brother in law, Durhame, to Sueden; where our countrymen contributed for the Kings aſſiſtance about ſeven or eight thouſand dollars, beſides what was got in Holland from well-affected Scotſmen there, and five thouſand guldens which the Princeſſe Royall advanced.

That ſummer I deſird my wife to give me a viſite in a ſtrange land once more, and to meet me at Bremen, which ſhe readilie did, and in

June arrivd safelie there ; the which meeting, after all these traverses, was exceeding comfortable to me. I could not learne what keepd the Generall so long in Holland ; waiting whose orders, I stayd still at Bremen with my wife, not onlie all that summer and harveft, bot nixt winter also. I had advisd him to give no commiffions till he came to the hills, that everie mans merite might be cognofcd on. This he faithfullie promisd, bot forgot it ; for he gave bot too many, and among others, one was fent to me, to exerce the fame charges I had at Worcester, which I accepted.

In Februare 1654, the Generall made faile from Amfterdame to Cathnes, accompanied with my Lord Napier, Sir George Monro, Generall Dalyell, and Lieutenant Generall Drummond, and many other gentlemen ; and though he had promisd to fend for me, that I might goe along with him, yet he did it not, bot wrote to me to follow him. In Aprile nixt I entrusted myfelfe to ane honneft skipper, who livd in Bremen, bot had beene borne in Scotland. I refolvd to goe with him to Norway, where he was to take in a loadeing of timber, and from thence to Fife ; and fo caft myfelfe on Providence, it not being poffible for me to forfee how I could get to the hills from that place. After tuentie days tempeftuous voyage at fea, we arrivd at Norway ; and after a months ftay there, we went againe to fea, and on the ninth day came to the coaft of Fife. I went afhore befide Enfter, in the night time, being then in June. I fufferd the skipper to take all my clothes, piftolls, carabines and faddles with him, all which he burried under ground at Culros. After fome privat ftay in Fife, I was furnifhd with tuo indifferent good horfes, by tuo noble and loyall gentlemen ; and haveing got moft of my things with great hazard and diffi-

cultie out of Culros, and meeting with five or fixe officers of the armie, (for so they calld themselvs) I went to the hilles as farre as Locherne, where I met with some others, who pretended to a great desire they had to be with the armie. I encouragd them much to so loyall ane action, bot found it was not their earnest; for they did bot leade me up and doune the countrey, without ever draueing neere the armie; which they might easilie have done, it being then at the heade of Loch Tay, from whence it removeing, and Monck following, it was never possible for me afterwards to come to it.

A guarrison of English, both foot and horse, lying at Drummond Castle, I lurkd some time about Locherne, with very much danger; and at that time, I had the bad fortune to see numbers of horfmen which belongd to the Kings armie passe that way, seekeing to get to their severall homes; haveing taken a libertie to themselvs to disband, after ane unhappie rencounter at Lochgarie betueene Generall Middleton and Morgan, wherein the royall partie was worsted, bot with the losse of very few men. I spoke with most of these horfemen, and found they were all willing to continue in the service, if their horfes were put in case, who were all pitifullie beaten, and that they had put themselvs in some better equippage, which indeed I saw to be as bad as could well be imagind. Upon confideration heerof, I wrote to the Earle of Glencairden, who haveing done some handsome things before Middletones arriveall, had acquird the affection of both the countrey and foldierie, bot upon some dissatiffaction given him, had left the Generall, and retird himfelfe with some Lords and Gentlemen, to the Ile of Makfarlen. I sent my letter (a copie wherof I keepd, and yet doth) by a trustie hielander. In it, I adjurd his Lordship by all that was

or could be deare to him, to appoint a rendezvous for these disperfed troopers, if he pleas'd, three weeks after the date of the letter ; affuring him they wold punctuallie keepe it, as men who were very readie to obey all his orders ; and withall offerd my service in it, or any thing els wherein he conceayd me able to advance the grand designe of his Majefties service. I reffaved his anfuere, which did not at all please me ; for by it my Lord told me, he could doe none of these things I desird him ; being he was layd aside as useles to the King or his service ; with some other expreffions of reffentment of the injuries had beene done him. This made me sensible that the Kings affaires in that countrey were all out of frame, and made me conclude it neceffaire, that he who was most concernd ought to know his oune condition, and that it could be represented to him by no fitter person than myfelfe, who I found could doe him no good where I was. And heerupon I put on a resolution to get out of Scotland as soone as I could.

To this purpose of mine, a faire occasion offerd itfelfe. One Menyies, a lieutenant of horfe, had about eighteene or tuentie troopers, and a trumpeter, with him ; and these five officers who came with me out of Fife, stucke still close to me. All of them haveing intelligence that there was 200 paire of pistolls in a house of Kircaldie, they had some thoughts of goeing thither to make a purchase of them. When they had communicated the matter to me, I fullie perswaded them to give it the hazard. On our second days march, we came to an ale-house in Glendeven, where they conferrd the command of the partie on me. There being good ale there, I caus'd them all drinke lustilie, and payd for the breuvage, a thing not usuall at that time in these parts. Haveing given the word and signe, I march before with my five officers,

and my fervant, inverting the ordinarie custome of *enfants perdus*, or forlorne hopes, and orderd Menyies to follow at a litle distance with the rest. It was towards the evening, and I had not rode a full mile, when I discoverd a partie of above threttie well mounted men of the enemie, Scots and English. By providence I had on both my hands tuo litle riseing hills, betweene which I tooke my place with my officers, the enemie being below me in no good rideing ground. I resolvd to ressave his charge; bot I sent my fervant immediatlie to Menyies, commanding him to gallop up with his partie, and to cause his trumpet sound a charge all the way. The enemie and I had trifled away the time with inquireing for whom we were, thogh both of us knew we were not one for ane other. At length, when I heard our trumpet, I bid one of my officers tell we were for God and King Charles, and cryd aloud myselfe, that English shoud have quarter, bot Scots none; and so charged. On our side no pistoll was discharged bot mine, all the rest being unfixed; on the other, one carabine and a pistoll, which last was shot at me. The enemie runne baselie, and my partie pursued eagerlie, Menyeis being a man stout enough and well mounted. After we had pursued by the helpe of the moone about a mile and a halfe, I cauld found a retreat. Sixe of the enemie were kild, and foure taken; to one wherof, Jonston, a Scot, bot borne in Ireland, I had given quarter, Menyeis unworthilie kild in cold blood. He cravd me pardon for it; I desired him to beg Gods pardon for so unchristian ane action, and so passd it, because I durst not challenge it. The mischief was, he made his peace shortlie after with the English governour of Sainct Jonston, and fuore to him that he had kild that poore man by my order, haveing said no Scot shoud have quarter; for which the English

vowd to cut me in peeces where ever they found me. That night, we refresht in the wood of Kincairden ; neither did I thinke it at all fitting for my partie to pursue their designe of Kircaldie, or me my intention to get into Fife. I was that night divested of my command ; neither could I by any intreatie move Menyies to march quicklie to the hills, knowing these of Falkland and Brunt Iland wold be quicklie after us, and these of St Jonston might be before us. The truth is, he had a localitie therabout, and looking more after money than men from the countrey people, he protracted the time so long as the English gave us the chase. Menyies wold have bene at killing the other three prisioners, whom partlie with intreatie, and partlie with horrible threatnings of ane after revenge, I saved ; they crying still to me to keepe parole to them, and had learnd well enough, thogh against my will, both my name and charge.

After this, I shifted myselfe from these plundering fellows, and having put away both my horses and my arms, except one short sword, I resolvd to get into Fife all alone, sending my servant away a foot clothd as a countrey fellow. The first night I was kindly entertaind at supper by my Ladie Breko and her sonne. He went to take up his bed, as he used, in the mos ; and I went on in my travells with a guide. The second night, the moone being eclipsed, I never in all my life felt or saw so sad and so heavie a raine, nor so palpable a darke night, thogh in the midst of August. My poore guide, who was honest enough, mistakeing his way, as it was no wonder, brought me in a mosse, in which he, my horse and I were well neere dround. After much tumbling, we got out ; bot he, who at best was scarce halfe witted, grew almost distracted with feare, not apprehending the true reason

of so great a darknes and raine. My feare was, that his feare sould make him difert me, and therfor I comforted him, ever and anone putting a shilling in his hand; and promifeing him greater matters. My confidence brought him a litle to himselfe; bot I was glad when I movd him to laugh, by telling him that he needed not feare the white collar of my horfe, which, when I met with him, he said wold make me discernable in the night time; "for," said I, "the moffe hath made him, you and me so blacke, that we may passe for blackamores." The poore fellow brought me at length to ane honnest mans house, and there he left me, after I had, to his oune thinking, overrewarded him for his nights sad turmoile. This honnest man brought me, a litle before day, to a friends house, where I defird to be. There I repoid tuo days; and after ten days longer sojourning with some others, I got to Enfter, where I found ane honnest skipper bound for Ostend. After I had lurkd foure days at ane honnest mans house in that litle toune, I embarkd, and with a faire wind in three days time arrivd at Ostend; being as glad to get out of Scotland as I was three years before to get out of England.

After I had viewd that strong place, famous for the three yeares siege it stood out against the Archduke Albert, I went by Bruges and the Sluce of Flanders to Vlushing, and from thence to Travers, where I was informed by that loyall gentleman, Sir Patrik Drummond, that the King had beene, with his sifter the Princeffe Royall, at the Spaw waters, and was then at Aken, the first and antientest Imperiall toune of Germanie, the ordinarie residence of Charles the Great, and famous for its hote bathes; the citie and many places about it, standing above immeasurable, and almost incredible subterraneous sulphu-

reous hote waters, wherby many infirm, lame and diseased persons are cured. I went by Dort to Gorcum, from thence to the Busch. There I took waggon, and passed through the land of Liege to Mastricht. From that strong tounne my nixt days journey was to Aken, paying money all the way to the Spanish sojors for my life. I arrivd there the 20th day of September, and rested that night.

Nixt day I addressd myselfe to the Vicount of Neuburgh, who was very loth to beleeeve the bad news I told him. Houever he brought me to the King, to whom, after I had kisd his hand, I shew that the losse of men at Lochgarie was not at all confiderable ; yet, for all that, the condition of his affaires in that countrey was bot bad, if the troopers disbanding and discontent of some of the Lords were rightlie confiderd. The last of these tuo seemd strange to him, as haveing heard nothing of it before ; bot I offerd to make it appear to him by my Lord Glencairns ounne letter. His Majestie seemd to be well satisfied with my freedome, and orderd me to bring the letter to him after dinner, which I did ; bot feareing he wold keepe it, I tooke a perfite copie of it, which I have yet by me. I was admitted to the bedchamber, and none else bot my Lord Neuburgh. So soone as the King lookd upon the letter, he said it was all my Lord Glencairns ounne hand. Many discourfes he had with me ; he said he wold shortlie send armes and amunition to his Generall ; he commanded me to waite on my Lord Neuburgh and Chancellour Hide nixt day, and give them ane exact and particular account of all I knew concerning his affaires in Scotland. He told me withall, he wold keepe Glencairns letter, thogh written to me. I told his Majestie, the letter was in the right hand, he being most concerned in it ; and so I was dismisd.

Nixt day in the afternoone, I met the Chanclore and Vicount Neuburgh at a convent of Franciscan fryars, and gave them that account the King had commanded me to doe. I found it was good for me I had Glencairns letter to produce, a copie wherof, and of mine to his Lordship, I gave the Chancellor to reade; for without them, these tuo were apt enough to question the truth of that part of my relation, concerning the mifunderstanding betueene the Generall and Glencairne. They wold have it to be onlie betueene that Lord and Sir George Monro. I told them that indeed it beganne betueene these tuo, bot did not end there. The Chanclore then askd me, if I wold not goe where the King thought fit to send me. I replyd, at the Kings command I wold goe to Japan. He merrilie ansuered, Japan wold be out of my way. I told him it could not be out of my way if the King sent me there. Bot perceiveing his designe was to send me back to Scotland with letters, I said I was readie to go, bot it was fit to let his Majestie know before hand, I was a very improper person to employ in an accommodation of tuo persons, to neither of which I was acceptable; for Middleton had shoune how small respect he had for me in severall particulars, which I wolde forbear to speake of. Glencairne, and the other Lords, wold looke on me as a sojour, and so one of those who they thought had cabald together to suppress the nobilitie. This was no excuse, bot a certaine and reall truth. After this free language, I was no more desir'd to goe to the Highlands. A choyce was made of Colonell Borthwick, to carry the Kings pleasure and letters to his Generall, Glencairne and the other Lords. Bot his negociation did the King litle good, and proved exceedinglie misfortunate to himselfe, as his foure yeares imprisonment at Bruges can too well testifie.

I stayd a month in that toun, partlie to see my old acquaintances, whom I knew not when I should see againe; partlie to cure myself of a disease which is epidemicall allmost in the place from whence I brought it, the Hielands; I meane the ich or scab, the hote bathes of that citie being excellent for it. Then I got his Majesties passe to goe to Bremen, bot not to leave his service. Haveing kissd his and the Princeesse Royalls hands, and taken my leave at Court, I left Aken the very same day. His Majestie went to Collen, and went backe to Maftricht, with Colonell Borthwick, and George Arnot, at that time page to his Majestie. From thence we went doune the river Mase by boate, to Burmond and Venlo, and so to Gennep house. There we tooke waggon and went to Nimmeghen, where, after a nights stay together, we parted. I crossd the River of Wall, and by land went to Utrecht, and from thence to Roterdame. I staid some time in Holland, and went to the Hag, to give the Queene of Bohemia ane account of my summers expedition; and I found it fit to doe so; for a report had come to her eares, that in my discourses at Aken I had reflected on Generall Middleton; and she being a Princeesse who had a kindnes for all Scottmen, did not love to heare that we should doe one ane other any bad office.

It was now winter, and in the midst of November, when I beganne my journey from Amsterdame to Bremen. I had a cold and troublesome passage of it; bot God be praissd arrivd safelie there in ten days time. There I had the comfort to find my sweet wife in good health, having myselfe passd the yeare 1654 with as much trouble and anxietie of mind, fatigue of bodie, and danger both at land and sea, as any yeare I ever passd in my life. A litle before I went to Scotland, the citie of Bremen had commenced a warre with Count Konighsmark the

Suedish generall in these parts, and had continued it whill I was in Scotland, with varieous succeſſe; bot at the long runne, they were forced, ſhortlie after my returne, to accept of a diſadvantageous peace, after a very chargeable warre. In it they ſurpriſd a ſconce called Burg, which the Sueds had taken from them, where Colonell Forbes my thrice noble friend was killd. He was brother to the Lord Forbes, Governour of Stade, a gentleman of much honor, gallantrie and integritie.

I had time enough to reſt myſelfe the whole nixt yeare, 1655. It was then that Charles Guſtave king of Sueden, broke the peace with Pole, fixe yeares before the expiration of it, and invaded that kingdome with a prodigious ſucceſſe. A paſſe was ſent me by one of his Field Marſhalls, Count Wittemberg, at the ſolicitation of ſome of my friends, and ane invitation to come to him, who then had enterd Polonia Major. Bot I knew how diſpleaſing it wold be to the King, that any profeſſing loyaltie to him, ſould ſerve a prince who had allied himſelfe ſo ſtrictlie with Cromwell. I excuſd myſelfe for not goeing, bot keepd the paſſe, which yet I have by me. In the ſummer 1655, Generall Dalyell came over to Bremen from Scotland in a diſguiſe. He told me Lieutenant Generall Drummond was gone to Holland, and that all being loſd in Scotland, Generall Middleton would ſhortlie be with the King; and ſo he was, and whill he was at Court, ſeverall letters paſt betueene him and me. After Dalyell had ſtayd three or foure days with me, he went with the poſte to Amſterdame; neither did I ſee him againe, till his returne from Moſcovia, which was not till ten yeares after.

Nixt harveſt, my wife, intending for Scotland, went a boord of a ſhip, and was full ſeven Dutch leagues on her way from Bremen, when the wind proveing contrarie, by Gods good providence, I alterd my re-

folution, and went doune the river of the Wefer, and brought her backe, that I might enjoy her company the enfuing winter. This was a great mercy; for that ship wherein ſhe was to goe, after fixe weeks tempeſtuous toſſing at ſea, was glade to get backe to the river, pitifullie ſpoyld, and three of her men dead. Not long after, a very heavie and grievous concatenation of diſeaſes ſeazed on my wife, which keepd her ſeven full months; and indeed I had reaſon to feare the worſt; bot by the goodnes of God ſhe was at length reſtored to health, to my exceeding great joy. In the nixt Spring of the yeare 1656, we found there was a neceſſitie for me to looke ſomewhere for a ſubſiſtence, and ſo for us to part for a time. This was a griefe to us both; bot it was our duetie to ſubmit to Gods good pleaſure. We reſolvd therfor to goe firſt to Holland, and advice there further; and accordinglie came by ſea to Amſterdame, in the beginning of May.

There I found Generall Middleton, who the yeare before had benee gracieouſlie reſſaved by the King at Collen. He was then comd to Holland about ſome affaires. A little before my arriveall, Dalzell and Drummond had ſhipd for Riga, in order to their journey to Muſco. I found the Generall civill enough to me, and after ſome faire expoſtulations on both parts, we were, as I thought, very good friends. The King keepd then his court at Bruges. A kind of league betueene him and the King of Spaine (who had enterd in a mortall warre with the Ufurper) being clapt up, many great things were promiſd by the Spaniard, few of them performed; yet under him, the king and all his followers had ſhelter. Thither Middleton went, and I promiſd to follow very ſoone after.

Finding no paſſage from Amſterdame to Scotland, I tooke my wife

from thence to Roterdame ; and after a months stay there, and the Haag, I found a good vessell bound for Leith, and in it my wife embarked. William Bruce, now Sir William, and Baronet and Cleark of the Bills, was likewise a passenger ; at which I was glad, knowing he would doe my wife all the good offices he could. I went with her below the Briell, where with a very sad heart I tooke my leave of her ; finding then how sensible and touching a sorrow it is, to part with a beloved yokefellow. I thought this separation of mine from her did too neare resemble death ; for I had no visible ground for any hope to see her againe ; I not being permitted to come to the countrey whither she was going, and there being but small probability that I could expect any fortune so soone as might invite her to come and take a share of it. Bot

*Astra regunt homines, sed regit astra Deus :*

The starres above governeth men below,  
Bot the Allmightie rules the starres, we know.

We put our trust in God, and He, who never deserted these who put their confidence in him, did not disappoint us. She landed safely, notwithstanding of a storme, and a great many Spanish capers at sea. I had provided my wife, on all hazards, with his Majesties passe, which served well enough against the Spaniards.

I hastened to Bruges, where having kissed the King and Duke of Gloucesters hands, (for the Duke of Yorke was not yet come from France, though daily expected,) I found the designe to send Generall Middleton to Dantzick and Pole very farre advanced ; and in the beginning of October his dispatches were ready. Great sommes were promised to be

sent to him from Bruxells, for leavieing ane armie there. The King of Poles affection to our King, in hatred to Cromwell, was not to be doubted ; bot affittance of moneys from Scotch merchands in Pole, was bot a speculation. It could not in reason be lookd for, after they had beene so well fleecd foure or five yeares before, by Maister Crofts now Lord Crofts. I was appointed to attend the Generall thither ; who tooke also along with him his brother in law Colonell Durhame.

Before we went from Flanders, the King, by permission of Don Juan of Austria, raisd three regiments, one of English, under the Earle of Rochester, formerlie Lord Wilmot ; the second of Scots, under Generall Middleton ; the third of Irish, under Ormond. Two more were added after, and all were put under the command of his Royall Hienes the Duke of Yorke. All the Captaines were to be Lords, Knights or Colonells ; at least fixteene Captaines were ordered to be of the Scots, wherof I was one. Bot being commanded away with the Generall, I never saw my companie, nor reapd benefite by it, except a hundredth and fiftie guldens.

A little money was advanced to the Generall at Court, which was all well neere spent before we got out of Amsterdame. We stayd so long there that my Lord Neuburgh was sent to haste us away. Sir William Davidstone, now Conservator, agreed with a vessell to transport us. It was loaden with Renish and French wines. He put in also abundance of provisions for our voyage ; and so on the twelfth of November we embarkd, and were a full month at sea in very cold weather ; before we got to Elsennure. Five days did scarcelie bring us from it to Coppenhagen, thogh it be bot five Dutch leagues ; and there we were frozen in till the midft of Januare. The Generall livd in that

---

place incognito, which the Spanish Embassador tooke not very well. A thaw coming on, in three days time we landed at the Mund, a very strong place in the mouth of the Weichsell, a German league from Dantzick. There we found the Suedish Generall Konighsmark close prisoner, who had beene taken at sea, not without suspicion of foule play of some of our countrey men under his command. At Dantzick, some of the Scots merchands, especiallie Masters Dumbar and Gallenden, made us wellcome. Numbers of my Lord Cranftouns regiment came over to us, whom we too soone entertained, having libertie from the Magistrats, (who wellcomd and entertained the Generall with all imaginable civilitie,) to levie privatlie. Seven days before our arrivall, the King of Pole, to our great grief, was gone from Dantzick, where he had winterd three months. The Generall sent his Majesties letter to the King of Pole, by a convoy which was going to him. The great Chancellor of Pole wrote to the Generall, and invited him to come to his Master, where he assured him he should be very wellcome; the letter was in Latine. A faire occasion was offered us of a convoy of five hundred foot that were to march to the King; but the Generall wanting money, we were forced to stay. He wrote some formall excuses to the Chancellor. I was desired to pen the letter in Latine, (for I was all the secretarie he had both for that and the Hie Dutch languages,) and it was shoune to two Polonian senators, before it was sent away.

No money being sent from Flanders, and the Generalls and mine being exhausted, we borrowed from the Magistrats, and private persons also, more than is yet well payd. That being spent also, we were forced to disband our sojors, and recommend them to a German Baron, who was levieing for the King of Denmark. Not long after that we were ne-

ceffitated to leave the inne where we lodged, and take up houfes apart, where we keepd bot a very forrie menage. Our credite was gone, our moneys were fpent, and all we had except our wearing clothes was impauned; and in that pitifull condition, we breathd rather than livd three months. Many confolotarie letters were writ to the Generall from the Court, bot becaufe in fome of his he had expoftulated a little for his bad ufage, a countreyman of mine did me the good office to informe Chancellor Hide, that I had ftird up the Generall to be diffatisfied with the whole Court. This was moft malitieouſlie done; for I could not have beene ſo wicked as to blame any about the King for our wants, in regard the Spaniſh miniſters not keeping promiſe to the King, it was impoſſible for him to fupply us. Middletone endeavord to keepe me from knowing this; bot not haveing ſhoune me the laſt poſtes letters, a thing he did not uſe, I began to ſuſpect there was ſomething in the wind, and I handled the matter ſo with Durhame, that I got it out of him; which the Generall knowing, he gave me the letter to reade. I told him I wold write to the Chancellor; and beſeechd him, by his letter, to vindicate me of a crime, he knew beſt of any man, I was never guiltie of. He promiſd to doe it fullie, and was as good as his word. I wrote to the Chancellor, a letter faire enough, yet ſo tart, that he might ſoone know, I was ſenſible enough of the injurie was done me; to which letter of mine I reſſaved a very faire anſuere, when I was at Coppenhagen; and in effect, finding himſelfe abuſd by his informer, he aſkd me pardon; for ſuch are the very words of his letter. After that, I gave him a weeklie account of all the occurrences of Denmark.

After this paſſage, I repreſented to the Generall, how ufeles I was to

him, being all hopes of doing that we came for, were evanishd, and what time I losd, being the most of Chrifendome were in action; I therfor defird him to permit me to goe and offer my fervice to the King of Denmark. This he granted me, and gave me a very ample testimonie of my faithfullnes and diligence, which I have yet a keeping. About this time, Sir William Davidfome had advanced me fiftie dollars, a perfon who owd me tuentie haveing payd me them, and old Mr Gallenden lending me tuentie more, (which fixe weekes after I honneftlie repayd,) I found myfelfe in a condition to fupply fome wants at Dantzick, and make my voyage to the Sound. I tooke my leave of the foure burgomafers, to all of whom I was very particularlie obligd; bot I told them I was goeing to Flanders, for further directions to the Generall from his Majeftie. The Generall difmifd me with exceeding great kindnes, and many embraces; and being convoyd to the Mund, by Colonell Durhame, I embarkd for Denmark. Sixe days ftorme I flood out, and on the feventh, haveing a good wind, I landed towards the evening at Elfennure. There I learnd from the poftmafter, who was a Scotfman, the condition of Danifh affaires, which was bot bad. I knew before I left Dantzick that the King of Sueden had forfaken Pole, and left Ragofki, the Tranfilvanian Prince, to his future fortune, and was on his march thorough Caffubbia, Pomerania, Meclenburg, and the territories of Lubeck; and by that time that I came to Denmark, he had got into Holftein, where, of ane armie of Danes, confifting of fixteene thoufand men, not one facd him the whole way; the Sueds, in derifion of the Danes couardife, hanging out lanternes over the fteeples of all the villages, to know if therby they might fee any to oppofe them, fince with daylight they could fee none. To

---

Copenhagen I went, where I was made wellcome by the Count of Ribelledo, the Spanifh Embaffador at that Court, and by him recommended to the Great Stewart, the fecond perfon of that kingdome. Bot he haveing gone at that time with the King to Jutland, where both his oune and the enemies forces were, I was forced to travell the whole length of the Ile of Zeland, the greateft of that kingdome ; to crofse the great Belt, a river foure Germane miles broad, which gives the name to the Baltick Sea, and to goe into Funen, where tuo yeares after, the Dane, with the helpe of the Hollander, gave the Sueds a totall defeate ; and at Odenfee, the principall toune of that Ile, I found the Court. This Great Stewart, or Grand Maiftre, as the French call him, or Reichs Hofmeifter, as the Germans name him, made me wellcome, and recommended me to the Secretarie of Eftate for Denmark, (for there is ane other for Holftein,) with whom I guided the matter fo well, that at the Kings returne to Coppenhagen, I was brought to his prefence. I kifd his hand without kneeling, and offerd him my humble and faithfull fervice againft all his enemies. His Majeftie refflavd my compliment gracieouflic, and bad me expect my anfuere from his Secretarie of Eftate, whofe name was Erich, or Henrie Krag. At this time, the Embaffadors of all Chriftendome were at that Court ; the Imperiall, Spanifh, Brandenburger, Polonian, and Mufcoviter, folliciting a vigorous profecution of the warre againft their common enemy ; the Sued, the French, Englifh and Hollander, mediating ane accommodation.

Tuo months after my comeing, about the end of October of the yeare 1657, Ulefeld, a Danifh Generall in Skonen, being killd, Henrie Lindanaw, one of the Noblefle in that province, was defignd to fucceed him. To him I was fent, with the Kings order to have a free fquadron of

dragoones, and to be Adjutant Generall of his armie. I had the Kings passe for free quarter and wagons. Takeing some Scotch officers along with me, and arriveing at Chriftianftat, (a skirvie litle toune, bot exceedingly well fortified,) where Lindanaw was governour, I deliverd him the Kings letter. He orderd a double centrie to be put to the doore of the inne where I lodged, and causd his toune major give me the word. Nixt day he invited me to dinner; and after he had well entertaind me with boules of wine, according to the custome of that countrey, he tooke me aside, and serieouſlie askd me, if I thought that theſe at Court who ſat at the helme of affaires were all in their right wits. I told him it was ſo ſtrange a queſtion, that, if I offerd to anfuer it, he might trulie ſay, I were out of mine. He ſaid, if they had been ſo wiſe as they pretended to be, they wold never have offerd to give him a comiſſion to be a Generall, who had never had a hier charge then that of a Ritmaſter, and this he wold ſhortlie declare to the King himſelfe, as indeed he did. He gave me notwithstanding free quarters to theſe officers I had brought with me, and keepd them with him, and ſo diſmiſd me with much kindnes.

At my returne to Zeland, I met with Major Generall Montgomerie at Elſennure, who had brought recommendatorie letters from our King, and the Queene of Bohemia, to the King of Denmark. He was gracieouſlie reſſayd, and the levieing a regiment of foot offerd to him; which he reſuſd, his deſire being to command a regiment of horſe. I tooke my leave of him there; he recommended to me tuo of his follouers, both Montgomeries, whom I ſhortlie after got accommoded in a troope; and ſo the Major Generall ſhipd for Holland, and I returnd to Copenhagen.

At my comeing, the Secretarie of Eftate told me, that he had learned from Lindanaw himfelfe, how needles a journey I had made to Skonen ; bot faid withall, that the King intended to give me the levieing of a foot regiment, for the fcene of affaires was alterd in my abfence. The Sueds had by ftorme made themfelvs mafters of Fredericks Ode, a ftiong place in Jutland, where they killd and tooke fixe thoufand Danes, the reliques of the Holftein armie ; and with them was taken the Fieldmarfhall himfelfe, very fore wounded, wherof he dyed a few days after ; yet neither his wounds nor his death were able to wipe away the afperfion was caft on him of treafon. In that toune, the Danes loft above a hundreth braffe canons, and a confiderable magazine of amunition and victualls. This confiderable loffe, and the evill neighbourhood of fo fturring ane enemy, wakend the Danifh King and his counfel out of their dreame. They finding they had bot litle reafon to truft the natives, farre degenerated from the vigour and courage of the antient Danes, refolved to levie ftangers. To that effect, fixe commiffions were given out for levieing fixe foot regiments, each of a thoufand men, wherof the King beftowd one upon me. I knew well enough how difficult a thing it was to leavie men at that time ; bot perceaveing I could not in reafon looke for any other employment, I accepted the commiffion. Bot intending to raife the halfe of my regiment in Dantzick, I wold only reflave the halfe of my levie moneys in Holland, then which I never committed ane act of hier follie. Threeteen dollars for each fojor were allowd us, for levie armes and transportation. His Majeftie cauld give me a hundreth and fifty duckats, to defray my charges the time of my attendance, not to be reckond in my levie money, which I was to reflave at Amfterdame. It did not

pay the halfe of my expence; yet it was a gratuitie to which he was not obliged, and therfor reſſayd by me with all thankfull acknowledge-ment. Haveing courted the Secretarie of Eſtate, as a man of his qualitie ſould be, I kiſſd the Kings hand, and tooke my leave of the Great Maſter and Treafurer, who were my noble friends; then I went to Ribelledo, the King of Spaines Embaſſador, and returned him my humble thanks for his civilities. I left him in a bad condition; for he was ſo plagud with ane univerſall gout, that, as he told me himſelfe, he could ſturre no member of his bodie bot tuo, that was his eye and his tongue. I tooke my leave of tuo Jeſuits who attended him, who were my good friends, wittie men, and jollie companions. I embarkd at Elſennure in the midſt of December, in a veſſell bound for Harking in Freiland. A very cold paſſage I had, bot not very ſtormie; and in ten days time I landed at the Uly. From thence I had ſome difficultie, be-cause of the ice, to get up to Amſterdame.

Letters of recommendation were offered me from the King to the Daniſh Court, bot I reſuſd them, not out of vanitie, bot out of pure loyaltie; for I ſaw Sir Philip Medows, Cromwells pretended Embaſſador, reſſayd at Coppenhagen with ſo much ſtate and magnificence, (which ſhows that England muſt be courted, be maſter of it who will,) that I had juſt reaſon to feare his Majeſties letters ſould have beene bot litle regarded. From Amſterdam I went ſtraight to the Haag, where I ſhew my commiſſion, capitulation, and orders to Monſieur Roſemving, the Daniſh Embaſſador with the Generall Eſtates, and with ſome difficultie I procurd from him the halfe of my levie moneys. I capitulated with a Major and three Captaines, and gave them commiſſions; but I gave them onlie a third part of my levie money. Whill

all of us are busie setting forward the affaire wherwith we were intrusted, behold, the King of Sueden, in Februarie 1658, passeth his whole armie, horse and foot, over the Belt that separateth Funen from Jutland. The ice was so strong on the whole Baltick coast that winter, and continued so long, that on the 19th day of March thereafter, the same King of Sueden carried his whole armie and his great guns over the Sound, over against Malmey in to Skonen, on the ice. Being in Funen, he beats the Danish armie there, with very little opposition. He pursues his victorie, passeth over the Ile of Langland, from thence to Laland, and at last to Zeland, the ice serving him for a bridge all the way. There did the English and Holland Embassadors meet him, who knowing their masters would not willingly see Charles Gustave master of the Sound, partly by entreaties and remonstrances, partly by threatnings, moved the victorious King to grant peace to the Dane; who bought it by a perpetuall resignation of the faire province of Skonen or Scandia, the Ile of Borholme, the strong castle of Bahouse, and some other places. Assuredly the King of Sueden repented himselfe afterwards that he did not march straight to Coppenhagen, whereof at that time he could have made himselfe quickly master; where he might, without stroke of sword, have got all the magazines of the kingdom, the whole fleet, which was frozen in, and the King with his Queene and whole familie, if they had not fled over the ice to Skonen, and so to Norway. But God had determined otherwise.

The Estates of the United Provinces were very angry with the King of Denmark for making that peace, which pure necessity had forced him to, without their consent, and therefore they discharge our levies under paine of death, arrests our ships, sets our men ashore, and give-

ing each of them halfe a dollar, bad them goe where they pleased. Such a miserable end had that misfortunate leavie of ours ! Affuredlie in this the Eftates did the Danish King a very shreud office ; for if they had sufferd us to finish our leavie, we had carried over 6000 men to Denmark, which undoubtedlie had moved the Sued to quit his resolution of invadeing that kingdome, as nixt summer he did ; for this martiall King falls with a strong armie before Lambes in Zeland, and at one time befeegeth Elfennure and Coppenhagen. The first, after a stout resistance, he takes by accord ; from the other he is beaten with an exceeding great losse. The Hollanders then perceaves their error, and to make ane amends, they send a strong fleet with their Admirall Opdam, who fights thorough the Suedish navie in the Sound, and victuals Coppenhagen. Nixt yeare, they send ane other fleet with De Rutter, and 2000 foot sojors, under the command of Colonell Killigrew, who assisted the Danes pouverfullie to beate Prince Palatine Sultzbach and his Suedish armie at Neuburg in Funen. The King of Sueden did not long outlive this misfortune, and it is reported, that he was heard say frequentlie on his death bed, “ Funen, Funen, tu m’as tué ;” Funen, Funen, thou hast kild me ! So dyed Charles Gustave, who in the short time of his raigne had beene the Boutefew and Incendiarie of Chriftendome, haveing kindled the flame of warre in a great many parts of it.

Then it was that I found how foolish I had beene in takeing bot the halfe of my levie money ; for my comerads, the other Colonells, who had got all theirs, were never brought to any account at all. It is true, I demanded it from Rosenwing, and he refuseing to pay it, I protested the Kings capitulation with me was broke and violated. We

were entering in a sute of law, bot comeing to tearmes of agreement, we gave it over ; and I requiring my passe from the King, tuo were sent me in hafte, one in Danish, the other in Hie Dutch. In the beginning of the yeare 1658, I desired my wife once more to crosse the seas, and come out of Scotland to Holland ; which she readilie doeing, we met happilie, praise be to God for it, at Roterdame, and therafter livd tuo yeares together at the Haag with much content.

Generall Middletone stayd all that winter, after I left him, at Dantzick. Nixt spring as much money was sent him as the King could well spare, wherwith he payd some of his most preffing creditors (for all his debts he could not pay), and bought some horses, and accompanied with Major Murrey, brother to Pomais, and one servant, he travell'd thorough severall places of Germanie, and visiting the tuo Electors of Brandeburg and Saxonie, at their oune Courts, he came to our master the King, at Bruxells, where he was gracieoullie reffaved. He was pleased to write to me so soon as he came. In the harveft therafter he left the King, upon what occasion I know not, and went to Amsterdam ; there he stayd all the nixt winter. About that time, his Scottish regiment was given to the Vicount of Neuburgh, Don Juan haveing commanded, that none shoud have charge bot these who attended it. My companie in that regiment had beene given away, long before that, by the Duke of Yorke, without any injurie to me ; for I could not both attend a companie in Flanders, and a regiment in Denmark. In the summer following of the yeare 1659, Middletone is recalled to Court, many great riseings of the Royall partie in England haveing beene projected, with greate hopes of succeffe. Bot the time which God had appointed to finish soe great a worke not being comd,

they were all blasted ; and Sir George Booths partie, which was the most considerable, being beaten by Lambert, the King with a small traine went to Bayonne, to attend in person the issue of the greates treatie of peace betueene France and Spaine, which that yeare was concluded. The two great Ministers of State, Cardinall Mazarini and Lowis de Haro, meeting in the Ile of Phefants, to cast that great affaire in a right mould, and thereafter at the statlie enterview of the two Potentates themselvs, a full conclusion was made, and the peace ratified, by the consummation of a marriage betueene the King of France and the King of Spaines daughter. Bot observe, that what shoud have cemented the agreement betueene these two crounes two yeares agoe, did dissolve it ; the French King, to vindicate the Queenes right, invadeing the Spanish Netherlands ; to so litle use servs humane prudence and policie, when a blessing from Heaven is denyd to it. Nothing was done for our King at that treatie ; which made him returne to Bruxells, where he found greater grounds of hopes from his own subjects, then he had reason to expect from strangers.

A kind of a warre haveing beene begunne betueene Monck and Lambert, the loyall Lords of Scotland desired Mr Bruce, now Earle of Kincarden, to goe in their names to the King, (since he was to goe to his wife in Holland housoever), to represent to him their loyaltie, to desire his assistance of armes, bot above all, to intreate his Majestie to impart his royall commands to them, how they shoud demean themselves in so great a concerne and exigent. And if they did not in plaine tearmes desire it, yet their expressions seemd to import, that they wishd his Majestie wold be pleasd to name some other Generall for them then Middleton. Master Bruce told the Lords, he could not agent their

business openlie at Court, without running a visible hazard to loose his estate in Scotland, which was considerable; but with their permission would employ me, who he conceived was faithful, and had nothing to loose at home. They were satisfied with his choice, and after he was come to the Haag, he broke the matter to me, and found me ready enough to goe about the business, but very shy to propose any thing to Middletons prejudice. My wife fell sicke in the meane time; but being told by a doctor that there was no danger, (which yet did prove otherwise) I went to Bruxells and delivered Mr Bruce his credentials to the King and Chancellor Hyde, who was then Lord Chancellor of England. I found the King well enough satisfied with all the desires of the Scottish Lords, except that of a new Generall. He spoke long to me on that subject. I offered in their name to assure his Majesty, that since he had a mind to continue him in his commission, none would oppose him. Meane while the King prepares privately for Breda, and commanded me to goe before him there, and attend him. There he came within three days after, and made welcome by his sister, the Princess Royall, and his nephew, the Prince of Orange. It was there where I spoke at full length with my Lord Chancellor concerning Scottish affaires; who told me many stories, and gave me full assurances of his affection to all Scotsmen, whatever had been said of him to the contrary, and of his particular kindness to myselfe; but withall complained of the unfaithfulness and falshood of some of my countrymen, as I have touched before. I told his Lordship I would not stay a minute longer, unless I knew the King would approve of my stay at Court, in order to my instructions. He said, he was confident the King would approve of my negotiation, and that his Majesty had much trust for

me ; bot could not wonder enough, what prejudice the Scottish Lords had againſt Middletone. Nixt day the King calld me, and told me full as much as my Lord Chancellor had ſaid, and wrote much of it to the Earle of Glencairden in a letter, which he commanded him to communicate to the reſt of the loyall Lords.

Bot there was litle need of any agenting any thing at Court, or of a new Generall for the Scots, or yet of armes to be ſent to Scotland ; for the Kings reſtoration, and the means tending to it, were carried on in ſuch a way, and ſo faſt, as himſelfe could neither wiſh nor expect the buſienes to be done better. He is proclaimd in all his three kingdoms ; is complimented by the Embaſſadors of the United States at Breda ; invited to the Haag by the provinces of Holland ; is there royallie and magnificentlie wellcomd and entertaind ; is congratulated by the Embaſſadors of all the Princes of Chriſtendome who were at that Court ; his oune fleet is ſent to bring him home, with Commiſſioners from both Houſes of Parliament. He embarkes in it, and nixt day lands at Dover, and enters his capitall citie of London triumphantlie, on his birthday, where, at his Banquetting-houſe, both his Houſes made their humble Addreſſes to him. And all this was done in leſſe then tuo months time.

At my returne to the Haag, I found my wife bot weaklie recoverd of a heavie fickenes ; and that obligd me to ſtay in Holland with her, till it pleaſd God ſhe was perfitlie well. Generall Middletone had once more fallen ficke at Breda of a tertian, bot it was of no continuance, ſo that it hinderd him not to accept of the grace the King offerd, to take him along with him in his oune ſhip. If he did reſſent any thing was movd to the King, to put ane other in his roome, he did not well

to revenge himselfe on me ; for not only my Lord Chanclor, bot the King himselfe cleerd me of haveing any hand in it ; and if himselfe harboured any evill thoughts of me, he dissembld deeplie, for he profeld otherwise.

At my comeing to London, I found his pouer greater, bot his kindnes lesse ; I speake this trulie, thogh I intend not to descend to particulars. His Majestie had designd him to be Earle, his Hie Commiffioner at his enfueing Parliament of Scotland, Captaine Generall of his forces there, Captaine of his Castle of Edinburgh, Extraordinaire Lord of the Seffion, and to have a troepe of horse for his guard. No act of grace or favour conferrd on any Scot, but what passd either thorough his hands, or the Earle of Lauderdaills ; and thogh formerlie these tuo had beene very intimate friends, yet then the seeds of jealousies betueene them were sowne, which brought forth fruits therafter of implacable animosities. Ambition will have the uppermost roome ; great Pompey will endure no equall, and greater Cæsar will acknowledge no superior.

I petitiond the King to remember my faithfull, thogh small services His Majestie bad me tell, to whom I desired he should have referd the consideration of my busienes. I namd the tuo Earles of Lauderdaill and Middleton. Lauderdaill promised, whatever Middleton wold project for me in Scotland, he should get it paid by the King in England. It may be ; and I beleieve it, he wold have beene as good as his word ; bot he was never put to it ; for, though, besides all other former services of my owne, my Lord Chanclor of England had, by a letter, very serieously recommended me to Earle Middleton, yet did he never doe, act or propone any thing for me. Tuo things I projected for

myselfe, which so soone as I told him of them, he obtaind a grant of them both to other tuo gentlemen. When I kist the Kings hand at my parting from Whitehall, in presence of some of the greatest men in England, (except these of the blood), his Majestie exprest himselfe very gracieouslie towards me, and told me, he had orderd his Commiffioner to provide for me. He conferd Knighthood on me, ane honor trulie never either deservd or desird by me.

I stayd in that condition till August 1662, and then it was that my Lord Commiffioner, by his Majesties expresse command, orderd Colonel Urry and myselfe, to raise each of us a companie of foot; the third the King had ordaind for my Lord Clermont, Middletons onlie sonne; bot his father takeing on him to be his tutor, gave the companie to Major Thomfone. Shortlie after, the Duke of Lennox raisd a companie for Dumbarton, and the Earle of Mar ane other for Stirline Castles. All five marchd in September to Glasgou, where my Lord Commiffioner comeing in his progresse to the west, he appointed the Earle of Linlithgow to be Lieutenant Colonell of his Majesties guards of foot, and me to be Sergeant Major. For what reason this was done, will be to litle purpose to tell. I had no commiffion till, a yeare and a halfe after, the King sent me one.

In the yeare 1663, his Majestie being displeasd with some of E. Middletons doings, appointed E. Rothes to succeed him, and to be his Hie Commiffioner at the third Seffion of Parliament, at the close wherof, E. Middletons troop of horse was casheered. Towards the latter end of the yeare, the King tooke from him his commiffion of Captaine Generall, which he gave to none at this time; as also his commiffion of Captaine of Edinburgh Castle; that, he conferd on E. Lau-

derdaill ; and beftowd likewife his place of extraordinarie Lord of the Seffion on the Archbifhop of Glaſgow. And this may fufficientlie let us fee the lubricitie of Court favours and preferments, the mutabilitie of all fublunar things, and the truth of that a noble French author writes, “ *la montée aux prosperites, eſt de verre, la cime, tremblement, et la deſcente un precipice ;*” the aſcent to proſperities, ſayth he, is of glaſſe, the top wherof trembles, and the diſcent is a precipice. It veriſieth alſo, what the Italian poet, Torquato Taffo, ſayth,

*A gli voli troppo alti et repentini,*

*Sogliano i precipitii eſſer vicini.*

Sudden and hie advancements, frequentlie

By precipiteous dounfalls followd be.

Yet the King profeſſed ſtill kindnes for him, which he hath witneſſed was reall ſince, in makeing him Governour of Tanger, ane honorable command.

I ſtayd at Glaſgow, quietlie attending my charge, till the yeare 1663; and from it I beginne the narration of what has ſince befallen me.

**MEMOIRS OF, SIR JAMES TURNER;**

**PART THIRD,**

**CONTAINING A FULL NARRATION OF THE**

**INSURRECTION IN SCOTLAND**

**TOWARDS THE LATTER END OF THE YEAR 1666,**

**AND OF HIS MISFORTUNES FOLLOWING THEREUPON,**

**TILL THE YEAR 1670.**



## SIR JAMES TURNER'S MEMOIRS.

---

IN the beginning of the yeare 1663, an unhappie quarrell arose betwene the Minister and some of the people of Kirkcubright. It signified bot litle; bot makeing a great noyse, the Privie Councell orderd some Lords to goe thither, and some forces with them, under the command of the Earle of Linlithgow, my Lieutenant Colonell, to examine the matter, and to imprison such as they found guiltie of the tumult. Some women were carried to Edenburgh, and keepd some time in the tollbooth; bot by the charitie and bountie of these who were of their perswasion, retourn'd richer home than they came from it. One Ewart, who had beene Provost, was banishd out of Scotland, not because he had any acceffion to the commotion, bot because he did not appease it. By the Kings clemencie, his Act of Banishment was taken of. This inconsiderable and almost ridiculous tumult, made a great noyse at Court, as if the whole Scots were readie to enter England, with a numerous armie, on the account of the Covenant; wherof some great persons thought to have made their severall uses.

In the latter end of September of that same yeare, one Mr Alexander Robertstone, (who was afterward hangd for rebellion) an expectant minister, tooke on him to open the doores of the church of Anwith,

---

neere that fame toune of Kirkcubright, and preach there to a very great auditorie. Bot thogh upon fummons he appeared at Edenburgh, yet the Privie Councill, to prevent fuch illegall meetings, thought fit to fend me to that fteuartrie, with threefcore men, to be added to the hundreth, whom my Lord Linlithgow had left there under the command of Captaine Ratray, at that time Lieutenant of my companie. Before I came, the Captaine had quarterd fome fojors on the moft obftinate oppofers of the conforme minifters, in the parifhes of Corfphairne and Balmaclellan; and at my comeing, upon bonds for future obedience, the fojors were a removeing. Neither was any fine exacted. If any cefle money was taken by the Captaine, or thefe he imployed, I know not, bot I am fure it was not complaind of. At the earneft follicitation of the minifters of thefe tuo parifhes, who were both of them exceeding weake brothers, I cauld the bonds of their parifhoners to be given to them, and they upon faire promifes of the parties, very fimplie redeliverd them; and this act of follie gave fome ground for my returne to that unhappie countrey. At the defire of the Bifhop of Galloway and his finode, I fent threefcore of my fojors with Ratray to Stranraer, commonlie calld the Chappell, being the people there were very diforderlie. After I had ftayd till neere Candlemes of the yeare 1664, the minifters complaining no more, I left that countrey, as I thought, in a reasonable good way to conforme; and in Aprile nixt, the whole partie was commanded backe from Kirkcubright to Glasgou; ane act of the Privie Councill being made to give me thanks for the fervice I had done.

In the month of March 1665, I was the fecond time commanded to that fteuartrie, with a partie confifting of one hundreth and tuentie

foot and threttie horſe, to put the laws concerning Church ordinances in execution ; the people haveing beene extreamlie outragieous to their miniſters, and diſobedient to diſcipline. I ſtayd about tuo months in that countrey, and reducd it to ane indifferent good order, by ceſſing on ſome, and by both ceſſing and fineing others, and by faire meanes prevaileing with many ; ſo that moſt of the Miniſters thought, if I had beene permitted to have ſtayd longer, they might have had ſome comfort in their charges, by a tollerablie good compliance of their pariſhioners. Some money I exacted, ſparinglie, from thoſe of whoſe obedience I had hopes ; bot from ſuch as the miniſters and I judged obſtinate, I tooke ſome money, and bonds for all they were found to be dulle owing, as 20s. ſcots for everie Lords day they had abſented themſelves from their pariſh churches. The bonds were all in Maſter Keith his name, under cleark to the Privie Councell. I aſſurd the perſons who gave the bonds, that upon teſtificates from their ſeverall Miniſters, of their frequenting the church, and diſhaunting conventicles, it was probable their bonds wold be returnd to them for litle or no money at all ; and this I thought fit to ſhow them at parting. After tuo months ſtay there, I was orderd to returne to Glaſgow with both horſe and foot, to be employed thereafter for diſarming ſome people in the weſt ; it being my fate that nothing was intended to be done, that was diſpleaſing to that countrey, bot wherin I was made instrumentall. Immediatlie after I arrivd at Glaſgow, I am orderd with both horſe and foot to march to Aire, Irwine and Kilmarnock, to aſſiſt the Earle of Glencairden as Sheriffe of Aire, and the Earle of Eglinton as Bailiffe of Cuninghame, for diſarming all, except theſe who were entrufed with publike charges.

When this was done, I rode straight to Edinburgh, and gave the Earle of Rothes, then Lord Commiffioner, an account of both my negotiations. I gave my Lord a paper of what moneys I had reffaved; what I had difburfed, and what I had by me. He fhew the paper to the tuo Lords Archbifhops, and a litle after, all I had done was allowd and approvd as good fervice, and I commanded to deliver up the bonds to Mafter Keith; the fuperplus of the money wherof I had not difpofed being allowd me, as I conceavd, for the charges mentioned in the paper, I had beene at, in three yeares before; as alfo for my expences in the fteuartrie, in the yeares 1663 and 1665. The bonds I accordingly deliverd to Mr Keith, and tooke a note of reffait of them from him, figned with his hand, which yet I keepe by me. The money I retaind, which was one hundreth and fiftie pound fterline or therabout.

Bot the people of Galloways minds being whollie efranged from the prefent government of the Church, and haveing beene bot terrified to ane exterior obedience, and, by reafon of my parties fhort ftay, not at all fetled, they foone furnifhd their minifters with new occafions of complaints, which were fo loud, that they were brought quicklie to the eares of the tuo Archbifhops; and they prefentlie acquainting my Lord Commiffioner with the great contempt of the laws, in order to Church Government in that countrey, fo that a refolution was taken to fend me the third time there, as alfo to Nithfdaill, where the people were likewise become diforderlie. It was intended I fould have gone in the beginning of Januare 1666, but fome things occurd, to which my oun backwardnes to that journey contributed, for indeed my mind prelagd me little good, which retarded my journey till the month

of March. I had againe a hundreth and tuentie foot allowed me, and threttie horſe were appointed to follow me, for bringing in the Parliaments fines, as they were called ; and indeed I very little meddled with theſe horſe, except that I quarterd ſome of them, on ſome deficiencies, in tuo or three pariſhes, in the months of September and October after, when I lay myſelfe at the toune of Drumfreis.

I was ſufficientlie impouerd, with orders and inſtructions from my Lord Commiſſioner, for ceſſing, quartering on and fineing perſons diſobedient to church ordinances ; neither had I at all any order to cite or proceſſe formallie the contemners and diſfrequenters of churches, and theſe who married and baptiſed with outed miniſters ; all which perſons could not be dilated to me by the conforme miniſters, for they knew leſſe than I, which of their pariſhoners frequented conventicles. They might indeed miſſe them out of their churches, bot could not tell where they were. I was commanded to make inquirie after ſuch, and to beſtow liberallie upon intelligence, both to find them out, and the fugitive miniſters, (whom I had order to apprehend) and to find out ſuch who harbourd them, and to quarter on them, and fine them. And by this meanes, I was more able to informe the Biſhop and Miniſters of theſe diſorderlie meetings, and who were at them, than they could informe me.

In May, if I remember right, a Sinod was kepted at Kirkcubright ; where to eaſe the phanaticks for ſome time of ceſſing, at my very earneſt deſire, ane Act was paſd for a bond of future obedience, to be ſubſcryved by all who had payd no fine that yeare ; with promiſe that after ſigneing and obſerveing the bond, nothing ſould be demanded of them for bygone tranſgreſſions ; if not, they ſould be ceſd on, not for

refuseing to signe the bond, (for that was a wicked calumnie) bot for the fines they owd for former delinquencies. Many subscrivd the bond, and so payd no fine at all; many refusd it, and so by my order were quarterd on for their bygone fines. A fortnights time was allowd them to advice, and in that time I went to Glasgou, from whence I had a call from my Lord Commiffioner to come to Edenburgh, where I reslaved new instructions. At my returne to Galloway, I cesd on such transgressors as had neither paid their fines, nor wold signe the bond. Bot makeing haist to Nidfdail, becaufe of a letter from my Lord Commiffioner, I exacted the fines of very few, bot causd them pay the cefse to the sojors, promifeing once more, if they wold yet keepe the church, they fould pay no fine at all; if not, though I was going from them, I wold not faile to fend horfe to quarter on them.

In July, if I miftake not, I came to Drumfries, where I tooke the same courfe I had done in the ftuartrie of Kirkcubright, and shire of Galloway. I dealt as favourable as I could with thefe who were averfe from Church government. And heere I fhall take leave, once for all, to write ane undoubted truth, which is, that I was fo farre from exceeding or transgreffing my commiffion and instructions, that I never came the full length of them; sometimes not exceeding the fixth part of the fines, sometimes not the third, and feldome the halfe; and many fines I never exacted at all, ftill upon the parties promifes of future compliance.

In all the places where I came, the number of the deficientes, and the Minifters feares, that I fould be calld backe before the bufienes were done, was fo great, that I was often neceffitated to quarter my whole partie on delinquents, and scarce keepe any by me, except my oune

fervants ; this may be cleare by this demonstration, that thogh I stayd in that countrey full eight months, yet when I was taken, I had the deficiencies of seven or eight parishes, whose names had beene given me long before, to quarter on. And this my order led me to doe, being appointed to cesse and quarter with my partie, and not to keepe any post, place or guarrifon ; for if it could have been expected that the people of that countrey wold have risen against me, my partie when it was strongest, wold have beene too weake to have enterd there ; and after I had enterd, it had beene madnes in me to have cessd or quarterd upon any delinquent ; for necessitie of selfe defence, wold have obliged me to have keepd my whole partie constantlie together, yea, and to have fortified myselfe against hostile attempts.

Three months before my takeing, the halfe of my foot were tane from me to goe to Leith, the warre being hote with Holland ; and in the latter end of October, my horse were sent for by their superiors ; so that I had not in my partie full seventie men, and all these, except twelve or thretteen, quartered on deficiencies in the countrey. In this posture were my affaires and myselfe, when, upon the fifteenth day of November, a partie of phanatikes both horse and foot, to the number of a hundreth and fiftie or therby, furrounded the house where I lodged, and made me prisoner. I was sicke at that time, and had beene so for most part all that summer ; it being weell knowne that, betueene the first of March and November, I had let blood seven times. I can not bot regrave all my lifetime that misfortune, which I could not prevent unles I could have forseene it. Tounes, castles, citadells, strong forts, well guarrifond, yea and some armies too, have beene surprised in our owne days ; and yet they had reason to expect the attempt of ane enemye.

and therfor were obliged to keepe good guards and watches ; wheras I had no reason to looke for any fuch thing, from a people profefling all kind of obedience to the King, and from thofe who had declared no warre or hoftilitie. And indeed none could fpeake more for me then his Majeftie, when he heard of it, expreffing himfelfe graciouſlie in theſe words. “ What hath befallen him, might have befallen the beſt man of the world.” What followed after my takeing, till the overthrow of theſe who tooke me, is ſet doune at large in my Relation to the then Lord Commiſſioner, a true copie wherof follows.—

A RELATION of the late Rebels their motions from the time of their riſeing, till their overthrow, made to his Grace his Majeſties His Commiſſioner, by Sir James Turner, Anno 1666.

May it pleaſe your Grace.

If it were onlie theſe of the phanatick partie that blamd me for being acceſſorie to the late Rebellion; I ſould not be much troubled at it; bot it is no ſmall greife to me to heare, that ſome who profeſſe to be of ane other perſuaſion are apt to truſt theſe miſreports, without either heareing me, or examineing the truth, eſpeciallie at a time, when my imprifonment renderd me uncapable to anfuer for myſelfe.

I thinke I may ſafelie avouch it, that malice itſelfe could not have abuſed me, and that partie under my command, with more horride, unchriſtian and inhumane crimes, then a nameles libeller hath done, in ane infamous paper diſperſd againſt me. And ſince I have anfuerd it, and all its corollaries, grievances, aggravations and inſtances, I

ought in justice to expect that my answere be beleevd, till the libeller affixe his name to his paper, and undertake to prove it.

I thinke I have just reason to desire all, of what perswasion soever they be, to beleve that the Rebellion was a hatching, long ere I commanded these parties which the libeller mentions; and that none of my actions, which he calls oppressions, gave any rise to that insurrection. And if they will not beleve me, they will, I hope, give trust to the worst of papers, I meane that infamous Declaration of the rebels themselves, wherein all may see that their takeing armes, aimed at no lesse marke then the setting up of their dagon the Covenant, the restoration of their Remonstrance, and such a Presbiterian government reestablisd as futed with the protesters braines, and the totall abolishing of the present ecclesiasticall, and consequentlie civill government.

My Lord, it will be impertinent for me to tell your Grace all the passages, dureing the time of my imprisonment, betueene the Rebels and me. Upon that subject, I shall be ready to doe it when you command me; onlie give me leave to say this much, that they confesd to me, that three or foure of their pretended grievances, wherof they said my oppression was one, did not at all give ground for their rising, bot onlie did accelerate it. Bot let it be so, that my oppression occasioned this insurrection, why did these of the shires of Aire and Clifdall rise, on whom I never quarterd one soldier? sure these men can pretend no oppression of mine. If my oppression gave a rise to this Rebellion, why did Maxwell of Morith, Maclellan of Barskob, Maclellan of Balmagaghen, Mr Robinsone the minister, Gordon of Holme younger, all of them commanders in this insurrection, and all of them professing that I had done them severall favours; why did they, I

say, rise? Nay, why did Wallace, who at length commanded in chiefe, take armes, whom I had not seene in three and tuentie yeares before? Bot I shall say no more on this subject, bot hasten to give your Grace a relation, (so farre as I know), of what passd from the time the rebells enterd in armes, till they were routed.

About the 12th or 13th of November 1666, a gentleman of the stewartrie of Kirkcubright, sent one to acquaint me, that tuo men were comd from the north of Scotland, to sollicite severall persons, (who they conceavd, were either dissatisfied with the present government, or otherwise discontented,) to rise in armes, promifeing them great assistance from their countrey: As also, he informed me, there was a report, the phanatikes intended to seize on the Citadell of Aire, now called Montgomeries toune, and to repaire it. Bot because the gentleman could averre, neither the one nor the other to be a certaine truth, he desired me to suspend my beleefe, till he sent a neare friend of his oune to make a more particular inquirie of the whole matter, which I beleieve he did; bot I was made prisoner, before he could give me any further account.

On the 14th day of the same month, about fixe of the clocke at night, a corporall of mine, (who had beene quartered 18th miles from Drumfreis), was brought to me on horsebacke, shot in the bellie by Maclellan of Barfkob, accompanied with 18th or 20th men in armes; and this was done, as the corporall affirmed to me, because he refusd to signe the Covenant. This did so alarum me, that I resolvd, (thogh at that time I was right sicke,) to march directlie to the place where the ryot was committed, so soone as I could get any of my sojors together; for my instructions being, as your Grace knowes, to cesse sojors personallie

on these who refused to give obedience to church ordinances, it came often to passe that I had few or none with me, and at that time, I had not above thretteene with me in toune. This made me immediatlie write orders to most of these who were cessed in the countrey, with all diligence either to come to me, or meet me on the way. I wrote also to the Steuart Depute, and desired him to meet me at the parish of Dalry, where the formentiond corporall was wounded; so being resolved to march, with as many of my soldiery as could be brought together the next day, I ordered these few who were present, to come next morning at nine a clocke to my lodgings, and resseve powder, match and ball.

Next day, being the 15th of the month, I rose about fixe of the clocke, and when I was almost cloathd, I found my selfe so indisposed that I was forced to goe to bed againe. Betueene eight and nine I arose once more, and haveing onlie my night gowne upon me, the rebells entered the toune, and surrounded my lodging. I went to a window, from whence I called to them, and inquired what they intended. Several of them, especiallie Neilson of Corsock, told me that, if I pleased, I should have faire quarter. My answer was, I needed no quarter, nor could I be prisoner, being there was no warre declared. But I was answered, that prisoner I must be, or dy; and therfor they wished me quicklie to come doune staires, which I choosd rather to doe, (notwithstanding the opposition of my servants,) then be murdered in my chamber, for some of them had allreadie entered the house. I went to the streets in my gowne, where many pistols and swords were presented to my head and breast, till Captaine Gray, (who commanded the whole partie,) made me get on horsebacke, and wold have carried me un-

cloathd out of toune, promifeing thereafter to fend for my cloathes. Bot at length he was perfuaded to goe with me to my chamber, and to permit me to put on thefe clothes I wore the day before. In the meane time, this Captaine feazd on a coffer of mine, where fome bags of money, fome linnens, and fome papers were. Bot his fojors got more, in ane other chamber, then he; neither could I make him or his officers fenfible of their oversight, in fuffering the rebells to cary away fo much money with them. Before I could get myfelfe in doublet, breeches and bootes, (and hafte enough I was commanded to make,) I could fee myfelfe robd of all the papers, moneys, armes, horfes, clothes, and linnens I had, thogh the Captaine often promifd, that not any thing belonged properlie to myfelfe, fould be imbecelled, and I as oft calld out to them to take all and onlie fave my papers; this was faithfullie promifd to me, bot faithleffie broken. Some few of my fojors were taken in their lodgeings, for nine a clocke, at which houre I appointed them to meet, was not yet comd. They lookd for Mafter Chalmers, the Perfon of Drumfreis, bot found him not, yet did they bring away his horfe; neither did I heare of any thing els they plunderd at that time. The Captaine mounted me on his oune horfe, and there was good reafon for it, for he mounted himfelfe on a farre better one of mine, befides thefe he difpofed of to others. Some gentlemen, out of affection, followed me out of Drumfries; one wherof was rudlie commanded backe, and tuo others were carried eight miles further, allmoft as prifoners. Yet I had the opportunitie to tell one of them, that fo foone as he returned to the toune, he fould immediatlíe poft away a fervant of mine, (whom he knew I trusted,) to my Lord Archbishop of Glasgaw, to acquaint him with all had paffed. It was a great addi-

tion to my griefe, to know that my Lord at that time, because of a feaver wherof he was not recoverd, might fall in a relapse, and so not onlie endanger his life, bot render him incapable to pay the King and the Church that service, which otherwise I knew he was both able and willing to doe ; yet I thought it more fitting he should have it from my servant, then from ane other, who could not perhaps have given him so right ane information.

That night I was lodged at the ministers house of Glencairne, bot the rebels did not let me stay long there, being frighted from thence by a misintelligence they had, that the Earle of Anandaill, and my Lord Drumlanrig, were following them with a strong partie of their friends and vassalls. I found it was in vaine for me, to offer to persuade the Captaine, that it was purlie impossible for these Lords, in so short a time, to get so many men together as could rencounter his partie, which consisted of above ninescore men, more then the halfe wherof consisted of horsemen, indifferently well mounted, with suords, pistolls and carabines ; the rest were afoot, armed with muskets, pikes, suords, fithes and forkes. When they had carried me away from thence, they put a strong guard upon me, and with much difficultie I was permitted to speake to the Captaine, who a litle before had dismissed tuentie of my sojors, whom he had taken in the countrey ; telling them, they should have no quarters heerafter, if they served the Prelats any more. They had kild one Hammilton, a sojourner of my owne companie, the night before, because he would neither take the Covenant, or cared for their quarter. I did pleade, I could be no prisoner of warre, and therfor desired I might be set at libertie, which was refused me with much scorn and contempt.

Then I desired he would leave me in some place, till I convalesced, which I hoped would be within a day or two; and then I would not fail to come to him upon my parole, which I promised not to break. But the wicked wretch told me, that he was so farre from believing my word, that he would not trust the King, my master, if he were there; and uttered such horrid speeches as are not fit for any loyal subject to rehearse. I then told him, he might now dispose of me as he pleased, for after these expressions of his, it did not become me to make any further applications to him. Most part of that night was spent in riding, in regard my indisposition constrained my guards to march but slowly. Once they took me in to refresh at a place called Castelfairne; the honest woman of the house was but shrewdly used, because by her pitiful looks she did show she had commiseration of my condition. There was one of my guards, called Canon of Barnshalloch, who entertained me the whole night, with discourses of death, by order, as I imagined, from the Captain. He told me, he believed it was concluded I should dy, and therefore wished me to prepare for it, and to repent of all my heinous finnes, especially of that crying one, of my persecuting Gods people, who made conscience to keepe the Covenant, to which all my actions shew me to be a mortall enemy. It is needless to trouble your Grace with any more of his language, or my answers to him; let it be enough to say, that I endeavored to learne from him, whether my death was to be delayed till more of their forces were come together; his answer was, it was probable it might be delayed.

On the sixteenth day of the month, we came to the old Clachan of Dalry, where their number increased to two hundred and fifty. Master Hugh Henderson, late minister of Drumfries, who lived neere that

house, obtained leave of Gray, that I might dine with him at his house. And though he and I be of different persuasions, yet I will say, that he entertained me with very real kindness, and desired the Captain to set me at liberty; whose answer was, that he could not dispose of me, till he came to the shire of Aire, where he was to receive further orders from his superiors. At this place, Major Steuart of Monwhill gave me a visit, and though he be a Presbyterian, yet in plain enough language, he called them both fools and knaves. It was reported to me, that Captain Graye did here offer to resign his command to this Major Steuart, and that he absolutely refused it. I had often enquired what this Captain Gray was, and by what authority he did command these gentlemen he had never seen before; but I was answered by them all, that they knew no more of him, but that he called himself Captain Gray, and that he had brought an order with him, to them all to obey him. I took much pains to learn from whom that order came, whether from one man, as a General, or from more men, as a council, a committee, or junto; but could never yet, by any means I could use, come to the knowledge of it.

At night, the Captain lodged me with himself, at one Mr Chalmers of Waterfide his house, who entertained me with much civility and civility. But so did not my Captain; for he being again alarmed with a report, that Anandaill and Drumlanrig were seen with a body of horse near a ford of the water of Ken, he got himself on horseback, and called incessantly to mount the prisoner, for now I had lost my own name, and passed under that of the prisoner. And because I was not so soon mounted as he would have had me, he entertained me with very rude language, and threatened me with death. This alarm

provd false, thogh it was most true that these Lords were very buſie raising men, to pursue the rebels. I was permitted to goe into the house againe, bot not permitted to stay long in it, for about eleven or twelve of the clocke at night, I was againe set on horsebacke. Very dark it was, it rained pitifullie, the wind was loud, and the way exceeding bad; yet sicke as I was, I was forced to ride eight miles to Corfphairne, where the Captaine lodgd me in a countrey house, with fixteene horsemen to guard me. I spent the rest of the night till day, in that poore house, as well as I could. Bot my Captaine rested bot litle, for the day before he had sent away the money, and other baggage, which he had got from me, and thinking he had sped well enough, resolvd to retire himselfe, before the fire grew hotter; and accordinglie did beginne his retreat that very night, which he managd so discreetlie, that he was never seene since by either me, or any of his ounge partie.

I have often thought since of the follie of this poore fellow, who since he was not so absolutlie wicked as to take my life, and that it was money he was looking after, why he could not be so absolutlie good to himselfe as to take me with him, who, no question, wold have bought my libertie from him with all the moneys I could be master of.

The seventeenth day of the month was spent in their quarters, under the command of Barfkob, Corflock and Robinſone the minister, who past then under the name of Captaine Robinſone. At night they enlarged their quarters, in that same parish of Corfphairne; and I was sent to the house of one Gordon of Knockgray, who was himselfe in prison at Kirkcubright, bot his sonne did entertaine me very kindlie, for some favours I had done to his father, bot he was forced likewise to entertain threttie horse, who were sent to attend me.

The eighteenth day of the month, being the Lords day, we marchd to Damellintoun, to which place Mr John Welch was comd from Edendburgh, with Maxwell of Morith, Maclellan of Balmagachen, and three or foure gentlemen more, who all of them became officers immediatlie. The first halfe of that way, I was guarded by civill enough men ; bot haveing spent one houre at a pitiefull alehouse, I was deliverd to ane other guard, the commander wherof did entertaine me the length of foure miles, with all the insolent and outrageous words that he could invent, and affurd me, that dy I must, and dy I should. My anfuere was, that my life was not so deare to me, as that I wold seeke it from him. When we were comd to their body, I perceavd the commander, whom I knew not. Somthing pussed with marshalling his disorderlie rable, he presentlie commanded tuo of the wickedest of his guards to cary me forward to the other side of a litle hill ; and spoke some thing els privatlie to them, which I did interprete to be a command to dispatch me ; which conceit of mine was corroborated by the inhumane language of these tuo who conducted me, who told me, it was just both with God and man, to put me to death on a Sabbath day ; in regard, said they, I had forced many pretieous Chrifians to transgresse the Sabbath, by hindering them to heare their lawfull pastors in hills and woods, and forced them to goe to church, to heare dumbe dogs, for so they qualified conforme minifters. I desired them to doe with me what was commanded them, and not to stirre up my passion, which might choak these better thoughts and meditations that were fit for me to entertaine at that time. Bot I found thereafter, that their wickednes proceeded meerlie from themselves, for I was sent to that place, onlie that I sould not see the disorders of their new troops.

At Damellinton I was quarterd at the principall inne, where I had often lodged before ; my hofte and hofteffe made me very wellcome ; and though both of them wer Presbiterians, yet did they professe their diflike of the infurrection, and my imprifonment. Sufficentlie well guarded I was, for three, (whom they calld gentlemen,) ftayd in the chamber with me, three others at the chamber door, and the reft below ftaires. After my guards had fupped, at my charges, Mr Welch fent one to enquire of me, if I wold reflave a vifite from him ; my anfuere was, he was a perfon I was lookeing for thefe tuo yeares bygone, bot I had found him now in a wrong time ; however, he might come when he pleafd. When he came, he enterd in a tedious difcourfe of the Covenant, which, as he faid, had made Scotland glorieous in the eyes of the nations. He held out to me, how great ane enemie I had beene to that Covenant, and how much I had endeavord to fupport Prelacie, by fuppreffing and oppreffing the people of God, who loved not that government. He wifhd me to meditate much on death, which, as he faid, I knew not how foone might overtake me. That, though perhaps I might anfuere before men for all I had done, yet it wold be hard for me to anfuere all before the tribunall of Jefus Chrift, where it was like I might fhortlie compeare. He confidentlie offerd to affure me, that the Lord had reveald it unto them, that this was the time appointed by God, for the deliverance of his faints and people, from the perfecutions and tirannies of thefe who had vilipended and contemned the Covenant. And then he told me, that though a ftrict guard was ftill to be keepd over me, yet it was the falvation of my foule that they fought, and that they refolvd to endeavor to gain me, and that I needed not to apprehend death ; bot added thefe words, “ I meane,” faid he, “ not fo foone.” I

anfuerd particularlie to everie part of this long discourſe. Among other things, I told him, that revelations and miracles were ceaſd; that it was not probable that he or his partie could ſet up their Covenant, with ſuch inconfiderable numbers as either they yet had, or were like to get, againſt the Kings ſtanding forces; the which, in all probabilitie, were on their march againſt them. I wiſhd they wold more maturlie confider what they were doeing, and give over in time, goe home to their houſes, and ſubmit to the Kings clemencie; whoſe former acts of grace might give them confidence to beleeeve, that they had to doe with a mercifull prince, who would pardon their errors, and take their grievances to his royall confideration. Bot by theſe diſcourſes I prevailld as much with him, as he did with me by his. I calld for a cup of ale, purpoſlie that I might heare him ſay grace. In it, he prayd for the King, the reſtoration of the Covenant, and downfall of Prelacie. He prayd likewiſe for me, and honord me with the title of Gods ſervant, who was then in bonds. He prayd for my converſion, and that repentance and remiſſion of finnes might be granted to me. After this, the conference broke up, at which were preſent as many as the roome could well hold.

On the nineteenth day of the month, about foure of the clocke in the morning, when I was makeing readie, eight or nine of the rebells horſemen, commanded by Mr Robinſone the miniſter, rod thorough the village tuice or thrice, ey crying aloud, “ Rander your priſoner, rebells, rander your priſoner, or you ſhall all dy.” I inſtantly conjecturd, that this was done on purpoſe to try what countenance I wold ſhow, and therefore I affurd my guards, (who were indeed ignorant of the deſign,) that it was their own people, for it was impoſſible for any of the Kings

forces to be so neere. One of them went doune stairs, and at his return told me, I had conjecturd right ; bot, said he, when first I heard the cry, I doubted whether to kill you, or goe doune staires first. I askd him, if he had any such order, to which he and his comerads answered with silence. It was then that one of my intelligencers (for tuo I had gaind among them,) told me, they were resolvd to dispatch me, so soone as they met with any opposition ; bot this resolution was afterwards altered. My guards were changd that morning, and after all the new officers had given me a civile visite, we marchd, and about tuo of the clocke in the afternoone, I was quarterd beside the church of Torbolton, and their horse in the parish ; the foot lodging in the church and church-yard. That afternoone many joynd with them, both from the shire of Aire and Cliddisdail, insomuch as they spoke of nothing bot marching to Glasgow the next day. Bot being informed that night, that My Lord Duke of Hamilton and Generall Dallyell were both comd to that toune, and that next day the whole forces wold be there, they betooke themselves to their second thoughts. Towards the evening, Mr Robbifone and Mr Cruikshank gave me a visite ; I calld for some ale, purpoulie to heare one of them blesse it. It fell Mr Robbifone to seeke the blessing, who said one of the most bombastick graces that ever I heard in my life. He summond God Almighty very imperioullie to be their secundarie, (for that was his language ;) “ and if,” said he, “ thou wilt not be our secundarie, we will not fight for thee at all, for it is not our cause, bot thy cause ; and if thou wilt not fight for our cause, and thy oun cause, we are not obliged to fight for it. They say,” said he, “ that Dukes, Earls, and Lords are comeing with the Kings Generall against us, bot they shall be nothing bot a threshing to us.” This

grace did more fullie satisfie me of the follie and injustice of their cause, then the ale did quench my thirst. That night, they sent severall parties abroad, who brought many horses to them. One partie they sent to the toune of Aire, which brought out of the tolbooth all these armes, which E. Glencairne and I had taken from the countrey people the yeare before.

The next day, being the twentieth of the month, about eleven or twelve of the clocke, the rebells marchd straight to Aire, and so farre as I could well perceave, their numbers were encreased to above seven hundreth; but they gave it out, that there were five hundreth for them, at such a place, and sixe hundreth at ane other place, and that their brethren of the north had crofd Forth at the heads. This they told, with many more lyes; for to speake untruths was a veniall sinne with these persons. While we were on our way, one Major Lermond accosted me, and usd me with many insolencies, telling me, he had knowne me before; "and at that time," said he, "you were a gentleman, but now you are not; for you are a persecutor of Gods saints, and hath made yourselfe a slave to Prelacie, and the instrument of their tirannie." I told him, though all his language were true, yet he had timd it very ill. Master Gabriell Semple tooke him away from me, and did himselfe enter in a discourse with me, of Episcopacie, Presbiterie and the Covenant. I was very free with him, in declareing my mind concerning all the three. Then he enquired of me, whether I thought vice and sinne were not more punished in the time of Presbiterie, then it was now in the time of Episcopacie. I answered, that though I could grant that to be true, yet wold it militate onlie against the Bishops persons, and not at all against their functions. But that he

might see that I wold not grant him that either, I told him, I never saw either publike or private finne more abound then in the years 1643 and 1644, when the Solemne League and Covenant was subscribed by many. He pursued that discourse no further, but told me, I was in disgrace with the King, deserted by the Bishops, and threatened with death by the Generall; and that I might easilie rid myselfe of all these difficulties, by signeing the Covenant. Bot when he saw that did not prevaile, he had a large discourse of death, on which he desired me to meditate, and so parted civillie with me. That night I was lodged at Aire in ane inne, three of their gentlemen in the chamber with me, and a guard of horse and foot below staires. Severall of my acquaintances were permitted to see me, but not to discourse in private with me. Yet Colonell Robsone, ane English gentleman, who lives at Montgomeries toune, found meanes to tell me quietlie, that my death was resolved on, so soone as the rebels did once see the Kings forces. At this place I borrowed a little money from a friend of mine, for I had bene master of none since I was made prisoner. I cannot omit to tell, that on our march to Aire, Major Mackulloch, who was since executed at Edenburgh, in my hearing, praised God for that happie day he had now seene; and, said he, "Magnified be thou, Lord, for thou hast done thy oune worke thyselfe." One of his partie, and my guards, rejoined in this language; "Bide you yet, fir, the worke is not halfe done, the play is bot beginning." I looked immediatlie to him, and smiled on him, and so did he upon me. Then I resolved, if possible, to make a strict acquaintance with him, and to that purpose entered in a discourse with him; but by it, I found he was a person not fit to be entrusted with secrets, and therfor tooke no more notice of him.

On the twentieth and one day of the month, my guards were changed; halfe a dozen wherof came to the roome where I was, and pulld me out of it with much rudenes and infolence; neither wold they give me time to subscribe a note for some moneys I owed to my landlord for my supper, a hat, and some linnens, his wife had prepared for me. And when they had brought me doune staires, and found no horse readie for me, they made me walke afoot allmost out of toune, till the gentleman who commanded my guards the day before, came and carried me backe to the inne, where I had time to satisfie my host, and take my morning draught. And then the same gentleman saw me mounted on such a horse as they had allowed me. Heere a spurre, which they had permitted me to weare before, was taken from me; and then I was carried out of toune, where they were drauing up their companies. He who commanded my guards, did most insolentlie revile me; he told me, I was a greater persecuter of Chrifians, then any who was ever mentiond in historie. He said, I was the author of all the mischiefes that had befallen either the Covenanters, or the Covenant itselfe. Nay, the foole averd, that I was the man that had both presented and admitted the ministers in severall parishes, unfufficient fellows, that came in by my meanes, without the peoples consent, with much more stufte to this purpose. He was so extravagant, that I entered in some passion with him, which made me tell him, it was below me to anfuere his insolent follies, and that he might say what he pleased, for I wold take no more notice of his language then of the barking of a dog; at which the ridiculous fellow requird the rest of the guard to be his witnesses, that thogh there was a great alteration in my condition, yet my heart was not at all changed, bot hardend in wickednes,

in ſo farre, that I had compared him, who was a good Chriſtian, to a dog. Bot Maſter Cruikſchanck the miniſter, haveing heard of this dialogue, came and gave him a very ſevere reproofe, and told him, thogh ane idolatrous king had ſaid it, yet it was truth, that he who puts on his harneffe, ſould not boaſt, as he who puts it of. Neither, ſaid he, does any of us know, bot that before night, we may be in the ſame condition that this gentleman is, or a worſe. From Aire, the rebels marched tuo miles, and paſſed the water at Aſton Bridge, and then drew up in a field. My ignorant guard carried me up to their van, where I preſentlie began to number them, bot was ſoone interrupted by ſome of their officers, who under a ſhow of civilitie, deſired me and my guards to goe to the nixt alehouſe and refreſh a litle.

Heere they ſtayd about tuo houres and a halfe, and as I was told, placd ſome officers both of horſe and foot. Immediatlie after, they repaſſed the ſame bridge, and marchd in to the pariſh of Colton. Bot by the way, I was commanded to alight from the horſe I did ride on, becauſe they alleadged he was too ſuiſt, and mounted I was on ane other, who wold not goe without ſtroakes. And to make ſure worke with me, they tooke away a ſpurre from me, which that ſame wicked fellow, who had abuſd me ſo much that morning, (to make ſome amends for his uncivilitie,) had lent me. I was very deſireous to have keepd the ſpurre, bot Major Lermond told me, that the committee had orderd it otherwiſe. “What,” ſaid I, “have they brought the buſienes that length, as to a committee? perhaps the firſt act of it hath unſpurd me.” They likewiſe appointed one Callhoone, a bankrupt merchant of Glaſgow, in whom they much truſted, to command my guards; which he did tuo days together very ſtrictlie, yet with very much reſpect and civilitie.

Heere Lieutenant Colonell Wallace came to me, in a long cloake, his muntero draune over his face, and his beard very rough. His deportment was civill; he askd me, how I had my health, and if I knew him. I told him, I knew his face, but could not so soone remember his name. He immediatlie told me who he was, and profesd to be sorry to see me in that condition; and after that, I had constantlie exterior civilities from him. We lodgd that night disperfdlie in that parish of Coltoun, where we had some alarums. And after the word "horse, horse," was given, (for that was all their trumpet;) the nixt word was constantlie, "mount the prisoner," which many times was given in such haste, that I had litle time alloud me to pull on my bootes; which made me resolve in time coming not to pull them of at all, thogh it provd exceeding troublesome to ride, walke, sit and ly constantlie in them.

On the tuo and tuentieth day of the month, we marchd to Ochill-tree, where Maister Johne Welch, (who went from Damellintoune to Galloway to fetch fresh forces,) met us with his armie, (for so some of the rebells wold needs have it called). I saw them afarre of, and reckond them to be neere one hundreth ill armed foot, and some fifteene or sixteene horse. I was lodged that night at the principall alehouse of the toune, where I was indifferentlie well used, and visited by some of their officers and ministers. Most of their foot were lodged about the church and churchyard, and order given, to ring bells next morning, for a fermon to be preachd by Mr Welch. Maxwell of Morith and Major Mackulloch, invited me to heare that phanatick fermon, (for soe they merrilie calld it). They said, that preaching might prove an effectuall meane to turne me, which they heartelie wishd. I answered them, that I was under guards, and that, if they intended to

heare that sermon, it was probable I might heare it likewise, for it was not like my guards wold goe to church, and leave me alone at my lodgeings. Bot to what they spoke of my conversion, I said, it wold be hard to turne a Turner. Bot because I found them in a merry humour, I said, if I did not come to heare Mr Welch preach, then they might fine me in fortie shillings Scots, which was duoble the sounge of what I had exacted from the phanatikes. Bot there was no sermon, which undoubtedlie I would have heard, if there had beene any. It was told me, that Mr Welch had a short speech to their officers, at Sir Johne Cochrans house, where most of them, and their ministers were quarterd; bot his lady was so farre from makeing them wellcome, (Sir Johne himselfe being then with the Generall), that she would not be seene by any of them. And I suppose, we were all of us deare enough guefts to Sir Johne, for I am confident, his servants were forced to entertaine neere a hundreth of their horses, among whom were fixteene of my guardes, if not more.

On the tuentie third day of the month they broke up from Ochilltrie, about eleven of the clocke in the morning, and marchd to Cumlock. Once I thought the rebells intended for Sanquor, to pay there some of their religious vowes; one wherof was, to ruine my Lord Drumlanrigs castles and lands, because he was active against them, and, as they were informed, had hangd two of his vassals or tennents, because they had faild to be at a rendez-vous which he had appointed. Bot the saints were wise in their anger, and delayd their revenge till a more fit opportunitie. Upon their march to Murekirke, they had intelligence that the Kings forces were marchd the day before from Glasgow to Killmarnock, which provd to be true. The way to that church was

exceeding bad, a very hie wind, with a grievous raine in our faces. The night fell darke before we could reach the place where the foot were quartered, with no meate or drinke, and with very litle fire. I doe confesse, I never saw lustier fellows, then these foot were, or better marchers; for thogh I was appointed to stay in the reare, and notwithstanding these inconveniences, yet I saw few or none of them stragle. Major Lermond, (who endevord to make some amends for his former incivilities), gave order to quarter me in the best alehouse neere the church. Bot threttie of their foot came likewise, and quarterd themselves with me, in spite of my horse guards.

On the tuentieth and fourth day of the month, about nine of the clocke of the morning, they rendezvoused at Murekirke; where I was permitted to buy tuo litle nags, ane for myselfe, and ane other for a drummer of mine, who had stayd constantlie with me, and for both I payd no more bot twelve dollars; it will be easilie granted I could doe no great feates on horses of that price. It was from this place, or from Douglas, that they sufferd Mr Welch his servant to carry ane open letter of mine to my wife at Glasgou, for they wold not permit me to write to . . . . . (who, they said, was at London), or to my Colonell the Earle of Linlithgow, or to Generall Dallyell. We began our march about ten a clocke, and spent most of the day ere we could get to Douglas, the way being rough and mountanous, and the weather rainie and boisterous. Here it was told me, by one of my intelligencers, that they intended to march to Hammilton, and from thence, (if they could give the Generall the goeby,) to Glasgou. We made a stand at Douglas till quarters were made, and in that interim, I was accosted by one Mitchell, whom I had never seene before, a preacher, bot no

actuall minister, who spared not to raile sufficientlie against all authoritie both supream and subalterne. He seemd to be most offended with the gentlemen of the long robe, who, as he conceavd, had beene the contrivers and penners of these laws, either in Parliament or Councell, which did uphold the prelaticall government. Nixt to them he furiously blamd me, for oppressing men in their consciences and estates, by putting these unjust laws in execution. He said, I had opprest men who had shoune more loyaltie to the King, in the time of usurpation, then any of these who had pend those laws. I told him, sharplie enough, if both my conscience and judgment had not gone along with the justice and equitie of these laws, no worldlie advantages could ever have made me undertake the execution of them. He seemd to commend my ingenuitie, but enterd on another discourse, which passd all prescriptions of modestie. That night, Wallace beganne to command their forces, which power, with the title of colonell, as I was told, was given him by their committee; in which also it was debated, what could be done with me, but nothing concluded on the matter.

On the tuentie and fifth day of the month, being the Lords day, they broke up from Douglas, and marched neere Lesmahego; haveing beene informed, but not trulie, that my Lord Duke of Hammilton, onlie with his owne troope, and some of the countrey gentlemen, . . . . . which made them speake of beateing up his quarters; which gladlie they wold have done, being much incensed against my Lord, because he had forced, under all hiest paines, the gentrie and communaltie to goe with the Generall, against both their consciences and judgments, as they pretended. At this place they stayd about two houres, haveing sent a partie of horse to Lanrick to make quarters. I was taken into a countrey house, under

pretence to refresh, but it was, that I should not looke upon their armie, (for so they were pleas'd to call it,) till they had marshall'd it rightlie. At length I was mounted, and led along the reare of both horse and foot, and thereafter I was brought to the front of the battell, where I did not let the opportunitie slip to reckon them. I found their horse did consist of foure hundred and fortie, and the foot of five hundred and upwards, besides the partie of horse which was at Lanrick, and some other small parties which they had sent abroad to plunder houses; a Sundayes exercise proper onlie for phanaticks. The horse men were armed for most part with sword and pistoll, some onlie with swords. The foot, with musket, pike, fith, forke and sword; and some with staves, great and long. There I saw two of their troopes skirmish against other two, (for in foure troopes their cavallerie was divided,) which I confesse they did handsomlie, to my great admiration. I wonderd at the agilitie of both horse and rider, and to see them keepe troope so well, and how they had comd to that perfection in so short a time. The foot were not exercised at this time. At length they marched to Lanrick, the horse crossing the river of Clide by the foord, and the foot by the boate, for there was but one.

The principall Bayliffe of the towne was willing to have lodged me at his owne house, but he was onlie permitted to show his kindnes to me, by presenting me with a cup of ale in his owne chamber, (all the rest being taken up for their officers), and by giving me a visite at another lodging prepar'd for me. Heere Commisarie Lockheart came also and saw me, and profferd very kindly to lend me any gold or silver I stood in need of, wherof I did not accept, yet I borrowed a change of linnens from him. The towne was search'd for armes and

amunition, and onlie fourteene partifanes, and three or foure pound of poudre were found, and taken out of the tollbooth. That night a councell or committee was keepd, where it was concluded, that nixt morning the Covenant fould be renewd, and fuorne. And the question was, whether immediatlie after, they fould put me to death ; they who were for it, pretended ane article of the Covenant obliged them to bring all malignants to condigne punishment. Bot it was refolvd, that I fould not dy fo foone, but endeavors fould be ufed to gaine me. All this was told me by one of my intelligencers, before tuo of the clocke nixt morning. Yet I have heard fince, that it was formallie put to the vote, whether I fould dy prefentlie, or be delayed, and that delay was carried in the councell, by one vote onlie.

Let now all people of impartiall judgments determine, whether this armie of pretended faints fpend this Lords day, as Chriftians ought to doe ; and thefe who make Sabbath breakeing a crying finne, how will they excufe this crue of rebellious hipocrites, who began that dayes worke in the morning with ftealeing a filver fpoone and a night gounie at Douglas, and fpend the reft of the day, moft of them in exercifeing, in a militarie way, and the reft in plundring houfes and horfes, and did not beftow one houre or minute of it, in the Lords fervice, either in prayers, praifes or preaching ? Bot they made a good amends at night ; for omitting the dueties of the day, by paffing one act for renewing the Covenant, and ane other for murthering me whenever they fould thinke it fitting. This I fhall fay, they were not to learne to plunder, and that I have not feene leffe of divine worfhip any where, then I faw in that armie of theirs ; for thogh at their rendezvouses and halts they had opportunitie enough everie day for it, yet did I never heare any

of their minifters, (and as themfelves told me, there was not fo few as tuo and threttie of them, wherof onlie five or fixe converfd with me,) either pray, preach, or fing pfalmes ; neither could I learne that it was ever practifd publiklie, except once by Mr Robbifone at Corffairne, ane other time by Mr Welch at Damellinton, and now the third time by Mr Semple at Lanrick, where the lafull paftor was forced to refigne his pulpit to him. What they did in feveral quarters, I know not; perhaps they had fome familie exercife there. I am fure in my quarters, my guards neither prayd nor praifd, for any thing I ever heard; and being for moft part in one room together, it is to be fupposed I muft have beene a witnes to their devotions. Bot I confefle I was more overwearied with the tediousnes and impertinencies of their graces before and after meate, then I was either with the fcarfnes or badnes of my meate and drinke.

It was now Monday morning, the tuentie fixth of the month, when one of their minifters did reade the Covenant on the top of the ftaires of the tollbooth, which was fuorne by all the affiftants. Bot neither I nor any of my guards were invited to that morning exercife. When moft of them were marchd out of toune, I was calld out of my lodging, and Major Lermond wold needs convoy me himfelfe, for feare, forfooth, that the toune people fould ftone me. Bot I am fure none of them offered fo much as one injurious word to me; yet I heard many poore people curfe them for takeing free quarter, (I haveing paid my hofte for all my guards and I dranke; for meate he wold take nothing, for which he witneffed his thankfullnes in holding my ftirrop, when I got on horfebacke.) It was anie ordinare thing for any of them all, to call for any thing was neceffare for either horfe or man, and fay

they wold pay it when they came backe. This was bot a peccadillo in both officers and sojors, for a great sinne it could not be in such faints, who, say they, have the onlie true right to the creature. Bot one houre was not past, when I could tell Major Lermond what made him so officious as to convoy me that morning. There was a certaine persone, who shall be nameles, who desired to see me led as a prisoner, enviroind with a number of draune fuords, to satisfie whom, the Major led me out of the way round about the tollbooth, before a hie window where that persone stood. There were many signes of joy, and much laughter passed betuixt him and the Major, yet he endevord to keepe himselfe so within the window that I could not see him, bot in vaine, for I saw him well enough. It was a ridiculous action of that foolish Major, to satisfie any mans curiositie, by abuseing himselfe, and the charge he then exerceed. And to the other, I shall say, it was below a gentleman, and unbeseeming a good subject, to desire to glut his eyes with the sight of the low condition and captivitie of one who professed loyalty to the King. Heere at Lanrick severall fellows joyned with the rebells, to the number, as I thinke, of fortie or fiftie; bot they were not able to arme the halfe of them. And now the rebells were in their greatest strength, which I avow never to have exceeded eleven hundredth horse and foot, (if ever they were so many,) for thogh in everie place some came to them, yet some likewise deserted them, among whom were some of their ministers, particularlie Mr Alexander Pedden.

Without the toune, in sight of their armie, for so they wold have it called, Major Lermond, Mr Robbinson, and ane other minister whom I knew not, with tuo or three officers more, came to me; and the Major embracing me, said, that I was in greater safetie with them then I

could be with the Kings forces, in regard the Generall intended to put me to death ; and that some great person had, and wold stop all ways for me to enter in the Kings favour ; that I had best confider my oune condition, that my perfecuteing the Covenant was the ground of the controverfie betueene God and me ; and if I wold take the Covenant, as they had done that morning, besides the good I shoud doe to my oune soule, I shoud be eminent enough in the eyes of the world. Much to this purpose did he and the rest of them harangue to me. My anfuere was premeditated, and such as proceeded from one resolvd to dy. First, I wishd that Mr Semple had bene there, to whom I had at large related, on what grounds I had taken that Covenant three and tuentie yeares agoe ; as also how I had repented for doeing it ; what were the grounds that movd me to that repentance, with a resolution never to enter into it againe. I told them, I lookd upon the present condition of affaires with a sorrowfull heart, and that I forsaw, that he, whom they calld their enemye, (meaning the Generall,) would engadge them within eight and fortie houres, which I wishd I might prevent with the losse of my life ; which I was heartilie willing to sacrifice, if therby I might expiate these offences, wherewith I was unjustlie charged, conditionallie no more blood might be shed, and that they wold goe home to their houses and implore his Majesties pardon, who is both readie to forgive for time bygone, and readie to heare their grievances in time to come. “ And now,” said I, “ gentlemen, you may perceave, by what I have said, how little the terrors of death are like to prevaile with me ;” and to what I have said, I tooke God to be my witnes, who, said I, in all probabilitie will shortly be my judge. And to Master Robbinsons (who spoke something to me of death,) I said thus ; “ Mr

Robbinfone, I know you, and to you now I speake. The house of death hath many doores, and thorough one or ane other of them we muft all enter ; for me, I refolve to endure the moft fevere ftroke of the Kings juftice, rather than cary a fuord againft him or his authoritie. If," faid I, " a man enjoy the inward peace of his mind, it is no matter whether a feaver, a piftoll, a fuord, a dagger, a hatchet, or a halter, uffer him to his grave." They were pleasd to fay that I had fpoken generouflie, bot averd that all of them were as much for his Majesties perfon and authoritie as I was, or any other that carried his commiffion ; and added, they wold give me time to confult with God and my confcience, which I accepted, and fo we parted.

They had marchd now about a mile and a halfe, and enterd in a moras, when one came and told them that the enemies forepartie was feene on the other fide of the river ; and that Mondrogat, who commanded a partie of theirs at the foord, had either dround or broken the boate. Lermond was fent thither, to fee in what condition their affaires flood, their body marching on. Bot within one houre, or therby, the Generall had paffd the river with both his horfe and foot ; the Earles of Linlithgow and Kellie showing their foot companies good example by wadeing the river firft themfelves. Upon this intelligence the rebells facd about, and drew up as formallie as the ground could permit. And certainlie if the Generall had comd up that length and attackd them, he had done it with a notable feene difadvantage, the moras being fo deepe, and the way fo narrow, that hardlie the foot, much leffe the horfe, could do any great fervice. When they heard the Generall had made his quarters at Lanrick, they marchd on. A little before this, Mr Laurie of Blackwood was brought to them ; what his errand was

I know not, but if it was to intimate the proclamation and act of grace, he did it with so little noyse, and to so few, that not all their officers, much lesse their foldiers, knew any thing of it; neither did he so much as give me any hint of it, thogh he and I rode a full houre together.

In this march, Wallace had severall discourfes with me, particularlie of the strength of the Kings forces. I told him, I conceavd the troopes of horfe to confist of fixe hundreth, and the tuo regiments of foot neere tuo thousand. Bot he replyd, that he had latelie beene in Edenburgh, and had privatlie seene all the foot companies, when they went out to exercife, and that he conceavd them to be below that number I fpoke of. He said, he was informed that the Generall had left tuo troopes of horfe, and fixe companies of foot behind him, bot where, or for what reason, he had not yet learned. He said likewise, that the speedines of the march, the foulnes of the weather, and the badnes of the way, must of neceffitie have lessened the Generalls numbers much; and concluded, he could not be above foure hundreth horfe, and eight hundreth foot. And withall he told me, that many that were with the Generall, wold wearie of the fatigue of the march, and wold importune him to leave his foot, and follow with his horfe, which the said Wallace protested, he wold looke upon as a great advantage to his cause. I shew him he entertained such hopes in vaine; for neither could the Kings forces be so much diminishd, or was it probable, the Generall wold separate his horfe and his foot; "a certain demonstration wherof," said I, "you have just now learnd, for you have heard that he hath causd his whole foot wade thorough that foord, which yesternight with some difficultie you passed on horseback. Bot if he wold have left his foot behind, it was his time to doe it on the other side of the river, and then have followed

you with his horſe." Moreover, I told him, it was like, the Lords who were with the Generall, were accompanied with numbers of the country gentlemen, with their friends and vaffals. At this he ſmild, and did infinuate, that theſe I mentioned were not like to doe him very great hurt, for he looked not on them as enemies to him or his cauſe. To this I anſwered, that all the gentlemen of the weſterne ſhires who were of his perſuaſion, had opportunitie and time enough to have joynd with him, before the Generall came the length of Kilmarnock. And ſo we parted for that time.

They came neere to Calder with daylight ; and againe, I muſt ſay, that I have ſeldome or never ſeene luſtier foot then theſe they had. They keepd rank and file on that miſerable way and weather, even to admiration, and yet outmarched their horſe, and got to the van of them, either thorough neglect or miſunderſtanding of their officers. Bot Maxwell of Morith and Lermond rode up, and reducd them to their former order. Neere to Calder, I ſaw halfe a dozen of farmers meet with Maſter Semple, who told him, as I was informed, that a good number of his perſuaſion had that morning keepd a private rendezvous, of purpoſe to joyne with him, bot haveing heard that the Covenanted armie had marchd towards Glaſgow, they had diſbanded. Mr Semple employed theſe fellows to be guides to their armie. When Wallace came up to us, he orderd his forces to march to Bathket, which was a litle out of the roade way to Edenburgh ; this, I confeſs, made me doubt whether he intended for Edenburgh or Glaſgow. He increaſed my doubt, by aſking me, whether I did not think that when Generall Dalzell heard that he, the ſaid Wallace, was at Bathket, he wold not imagine, that he had turnd head to Glaſgow, and therfor wold endea-

vour to get between him and it. He smild when he askd me this question, hugging himselfe (as I found afterwards) with the fancie, that he had, by that turn of his, cast the Generall a whole days march behind him. I told him, there was no question bot the Kings Lieutenant Generall could not readilie resolve, whether to follow him straight to Edenburgh, or intercept his passage to Glasgowe, for I myselfe, who was with him, did much doubt which of the two places he intended for. This doubt of mine made him laugh with open mouth, for it was no small joy to him to think he had puzzled me; and this gave me occasion to meditate a whole houre after, how vaine a thing man is.

Haveing well enough perceavd, notwithstanding this frolicke of his, that he still imagin'd the Kings forces were at his heels, and therfor wold not stay long in one place, I desird him to permit me, with my guards, to goe to some house, where I might repose a litle. My desire was civilly granted by him, and he seemd to regrave very much, both my condition and indisposition. My guards, (wherof David Scot, a weaver, was Captaine,) carried me straight to Bathket, and tooke up for my quarters the best alehouse; and there some countrey gentlemen of my acquaintance had beene undoubtedlie unhorsed, if I had not usd some dexterous means, not perceivd then by my blockheaded guards, to make them understand their danger, and escape it; for which some of my guards, sorry to have loosed such a prey, complaind afterwards to Wallace, bot he tooke litle or no notice of it. After I had refreshd a litle, Mr Semple, and their pretended Generall Quartermaster, came to the house, and made quarter for the armie; bot so, that none of their horse were to lodge one mile beyond that place. When they

had done, and that Mr Semple, and I had discoursed a litle, I cast myfelfe on the top of a bed, and fleepd till Wallace and the reft of his officers came. He and they made their fupper at my lodgeing; I was invited to it, bot pretended want of fleepe for my excuse. About tuelve of the clocke at night, " Horfe, horfe, and mount the prifoner," was proclaimd. All was readilie obeyed, and the march went from thence ftraight to Edenburgh; bot the raynie and boyfterous weather, the darknes of the night, and deepnes of the way, occafioned a moft diforderlie march; for after they were three or foure miles on their way, moft of them, both horfe and foot, went into houfes on the hie way, and by my perfuafion, fo did my guards too. We ftayd in a poore houfe, till daylight fummond us to horfebacke. That night fortie horfe were too many to have routed them all. Bot feldome doth one enemie trulie know what ane other is doing. Nixt morning, about ten of the clocke, they rallied well enough at the new bridge, five miles from Edenburgh. They drew up in tuo fquadrons of horfe, and one of foot. In the numbering of all the three, I could find few above one thoufand.

At this place, I neither heard prayers, pfalmes, or preaching; yet one of their minifters, (and they faid, it was either one Guthrie, or one Oglebie,) made a fpeech to them, which, if his caufe had beene good, had not been evill. He defird them to remember that Covenant and oath of God, which they had fborne the day before, and that they were obliged to cary themfelves not onlie pieouflic to God, bot civillie and difcreetlie to man. He affurd them, their friends were readie to reflave and embrace them with open armes, and furnifh them with all neceffaries for backe and bellie, as alfo with all things might render them able to encounter their enemies; armes and amunition affuredlie

he meant. "Bot," said he, "you must not stop there, for to be civil to those who are good to you, deserves neither thanks nor reward. Bot I intreat you," said he, "to use all imaginable discretion to those who are not of your persuasion; endeavor to gain them with love, and by your good carriage, stop the mouths of your adversaries." This speech, though it was not unworthy a Christian, (though a rebell,) yet did it not at all please me; for by it I perceavd the minister conceavd the town of Edinburgh to be his own. Bot before he sleepd, I was disapufed, and he was disappointed.

It was now the seven and twentieth day of the month, and threteenth of the infurrection, when the rebels marchd from that bridge to Collinton, two miles from Edinburgh. In some places of the way, they were in view of the Castle, bot at such a distance that the guns of it could not reach them. The place where they quarterd, by reason of a church and churchyard, a stone bridge, the water, because of the great raine, unfoordable, was defensible enough against infalls. My guards and I were lodged in the best inn, and about the evening, Wallace and most of his officers gave me a visite. He told me that he was more troubled for me than for himselfe; for he found it wold be convenient for him to stay in the field most of that night, which he thought wold not be fit for me to doe, and therfor askd me, if I wold not stay in my lodgeing with my guards. Bot I apprehending my guard might have order rather to dispatch me, then suffer me to be taken from them, told him, I wold rather choof to goe to the field with him. While we were speaking thus, the noyce of two pistols gave an alarm; Wallace presentlie left me, bot left order with my guard to keepe me in my lodgeing till his further direction. After a

little time he returned, and told me it was boyfterous and rainie weather, and that he had refolved to let ane evill night kill itfelfe; and that I might goe and take fome reft if I pleased.

Bot the above mentioned Laurie of Blekwood his comeing to that place, with Mr Richard of Barfkemmine, who was fent from the Generall, made me refolve not to fleepe till I knew both their errand and their anfuere. And becaufe I found I was not concernd in my oune particular in any of them, I refolvd to be the more free both in it and their generall meffage. Both of them gave me a vifite, and I found Mr Laurie did not deceave my expectation of him. They had met with Wallace and his officers, before I faw them. Barfkemmine came alone without Laurie; he was followed by Mr Robinfone and tuo other phanaticks, who were to beare witnes what pafd betueene him and me. I dare affure your Grace, Barfkemmine acted his part very handfomlie. He intimated to all he could either meet or fpeake with, (without any feare of the rebells,) his Majefties act of grace, and the Privie Councells proclamation; which did produce fo good effects, that it diminifhd their number at leaft one hundreth, before nixt morning. He and I both endevord very much to fpeake one word in private together, bot Mr Robbifone wold by no means permit it; yet we mannagd the bufienes fo well, that under the notion of fome dollars, (which he offerd to lend me,) I told him the true number of the rebells, and as much of their defignes as I either knew or could gueffe at. At our conference, one of my guards faid, there was a fleet of fortie men of warre of Hollanders neere the coaft of Scotland; to which Barfkemmine replyd, that whoever trusted to the Hollanders, leand on a broken reed; and this I feconded, which put Mr Robbifone in fo great

a passion, that he did with much impudence avouch, that he and the rest of his partie were as ready to march against the Hollanders, in defence of his prince and his countrey, as either Barfkemmine or I, though I had my libertie. And then it was that I did declare to him, in presence of Barfkemmine, that I was readie to performe the promise I had made at Lanrick, of sacrificing my life, to shunne the effusion of more blood, which I did too well perceave wold be shed. And it was then likewise that Mr Robbifone declared, that nothing wold satisfie their partie but the dounfall of Episcopacie, and the restoration of Presbyterian government.

Before Barfkemmine came, I asked Wallace how it came to passe, that neither wine, good bread, nor strong waters, were brought from Edinburgh by his futlers. He answered me, that the provost of that citie had taken such a strict course for keeping all so well within the towne, that nothing could be brought out of it; and that the same provost had appointed strong guards, with . . . fielding peeces, at everie port, and had cast up a very strong worke at the Westport, which I interpreted to be a barricado. He told me also, that he was of the opinion that the provost wold receive no message or address from him. By this ingenuous discourse, Colonell Wallace did exceedingly comfort me; for I had reason to imagine that the rebels made an account to get strong supplies out of that citie, if not to be absolute masters of it. About two or three of the clocke in the morning, the rebels quarters without Collinton were beaten up by some loyall gentlemen, under the command of my Lord Ramsay, as I suppose, who quartered then in the Canongate with some of the gentry of Lothian, wherof he was Sheriffe. What number was kild or taken I did not

much inquire, bot they said themselves that a stout resistance was made.

That night, I was told by one of my intelligencers, that one of the rebels had undertaken to carry a message into Edinburgh, and bring an answer out of it from their friends. And so he might, for I knew the undertaker to be an Edinburgh merchant. Next morning the same person told me, that the messenger was returned, bot with what news he could not tell. "We shall," said I, "know that quickly by their motions." And it was as I said, for immediately they marched southward, dispairing of any good from the city.

It was the twentieth day of the month, and the fourteenth and last of the rebellion. At first, when they began their march, I imagined they intended for Dalkeith, and so to Tiviotdaill. Bot when I saw them leave that road, and take the way of Linton, I knew not what to think, and perhaps the rebels knew not what to do. Some four or five miles from Edinburgh, at a place called the Gallow Law, (an ominous name,) they made an halt, bot did not draw up, waiting for their rear, for many had stayed behind looking for their breakfasts. Some whereof, and these not a few, I saw go into Fulford, not to plunder, (for that was an odious word in the ears of the saints,) bot only to enquire how Sir William Purves his cellars were provided. His servants can tell if these pious people did offer any drink money for what they ate, drunke, or tooke. At this place, one of my guards made me a proffer of some bread and cheese, which he said he had got at a curate's house; for now the work of reformation went so strongly on, that all gentlemen, and country farmers, who had any thing that was useful for the saints, paid under the name of curats. I told him,

I was readie to accept his offer, (and indeed, I was not so hungrie the whole time I was their prifoner,) if I could be affurd of a cup of ale, which he promisd to bring from the nixt alehoufe. In the mean time came Wallace, who feeing me a foot, lighted from his horfe, and began to enter in a difcourfe with me. Bot whill I endeavord both to heare him, and make ufe of my well purchacd vittails, one of my guards pointing at ane hie hill, cryd, "There comes the enemy;" . . . ane other of them cryd, "It is a partie of our oune." We lookd prefentlie that way, and whether Wallace was ftartled at this fight or not, I know not, bot I am fure I was fo alarmd that I forgot my breade and cheefe. When I faw the partie appear numerous, I prefentlie apprehended it was the Generalls forpartie, or forlorne hope, efpeciallie when I calld to mind that Barfkemmine had told me, that the head quarter the night before had been at Weft Calder. It provd to be as I thought, which, as I was afterwards informed, was commanded by Lieutenant Generall Drummond himfelfe. I faid to Wallace, "Sir, be not furprifed, for this may prove to be a partie of your oune, which I faw ride up ane other hill a little while agoe." His anfuere was this; "They are tuo blacke," meaneing many, "to be a partie of ours; fy, fy, for ground to draw up on." To which I replyd, "You had beft look for it elfwhere, for heere there is none." Both of us got prefentlie on horfebacke, and fince that time I never faw him. This I fhall fay of him, (rebell as he is,) he was conftantlie civill to me, and I have charitie to beleeve, if he had not beene over ruled by others, the reftraint of my libertie wold have beene the greateft hurt I might have expected from him. He tooke all his people, horfe and foot, round about the Gallow Law, and drew them up in that order as firft Lieutenant Generall Drummond,

and thereafter Generall Dallyell saw them. I shall not offer to give your Grace an account of the skirmish which the Kings Major Generall and his forepartie had with the rebels, and the successful issue of it, or how long he stood with his partie after that skirmish, before the cavalerie came up to him ; onlie this I may assure your Grace, that it was very comfortable to me to see him keepe his ground. Nor shall I trouble your Grace to tell you, how long it was ere the foot could come up . . the horse, though all possible diligence, even to extremitie, was used by the Earles of Linlithgow and Kellie to bring the infanterie up. And though these noble lords, and all under their command, could not bot be . . . . . so long and so arduous a march, (for though I was not with them, yet I went almost foot for foot before them,) in most stormie and tempestuous weather, and very bad way ; yet at night, after the fight, I found both their lordships, and all under them, not only readie to prosecute the victorie, bot if need had beene, to have followed that night the rebels, if they had endeavored, without fighting, to have made their retreat. Neither shall I offer to trouble your Grace with the errors the Rebels committed at this their last tryall, or with the success of that unhappie encounter, being I know all this hath beene sufficientlie done by his Majesties Lieutenant Generall and Major Generall. I shall onlie presume to give your Grace an account of what they did not see, and what I did see.

After the encounter which the Major Generall had in the morning, I saw seven or eight of the Rebels horses come backe upon their squads, without riders ; which, when thirtie or fortie of their horsemen (who were bot coming up from the reare,) did perceive, they kepted on the high way to Linton, at a faire and full trot, without offering to turne

the hill to joyne with their brethren ; so much did selfe preservation prevaile over selfe denyall with these Covenanters. At which fight, three or foure of my guards askd me, what that flight meant. I dealt ingenuoullie with them, and told them, that these who fled, did like wise men and good subjects, in embracing the Kings Act of Grace ; and in obedience of the Kings proclamation, were goeing home to their houses ; and if my guards were wise, they would do the like, for they wold find it wold prove their safest course. I found I had spoke more honnestlie than prudentlie, for one of them told me I wold doe well not to use such discourageing words, and that he esteemd these who had diserted their partie were base, perjurd, and cowards ; this taught me to be more wary afterwards. I was shorthie after that brought to the top of a litle hill, where I might see all was done. When the foot of his Majesties forces were joynd with the horse, my guards seemd to be something sollicitous of their owne safetie, which movd me to take the opportunitie to tell them, that they shoud suffer none of their owne armie to joyne with them, except these who were appointed to guard me, otherwise it might fall out that their guards, growing numerous, might be calld doune by Wallace to fight ; to which I perceavd they had bot litle stomacke. This advice they punctuallie followd. Then they desird me to use freedome with them, and tell them what my opinion was wold be the issue. I did not intend in this to satiffy their curiositie, for I thought my possesing them with vaine hopes, or dejecting them with fears, might prove equallie dangerous to me. I told them that the Kings Lieutenant Generall had stayd so long on the hill, that it was not probable he wold engadge with them that night ; and that he was lodged in so strong a ground, that it was not

possible for the Covenanters to attack him, with any hopes of success.

Not long after this, the Lieutenant Generall drew doune from the hill in very good order. This my guards and I saw with equall joy, but with farre different thoughts; for they told me they conceavd he wold march to Edenburgh, but I had reason to be of ane other opinion. I was exceeding glad to see the matter brought now to a trial, at so great odds. I prayd heartlie for victorie to his Majesties forces, wherof I made no kind of doubt. I knew the odds of my particular condition might be this; if the Rebels were beaten, I might probable be sent to ane other world that very night; but if they were victorious, it was like I might be permitted to breath a day or tuo, and then put to death with some pretended forme of justice. We saw tuo gentlemen of the Kings armie try the ground on which they drew up afterwards, which they seemd to do exactlie. I understood thereafter, that it was the Generall himselfe, and Muster master Generall Arnot. Both of them came so neere the Rebels that they could speake with them, and as I afterwards understood, the Generall was qualified by them with the title of Episcopall rogue, and the Generall Muster master with that of saucie fellow.

Whill the Kings forces were takeing up their ground, I was carryed by my guards behind the little riseing of a ground, which hinderd me to see any thing. One Dandilling, a gentleman whom the Rebels had keepd prisoner with me fixe or seven days, came and told me, that Mr Cruikshank the minister, and one Thomas Maclellan, (a young gentleman who had done me severall good offices,) had beene both kild in the morning skirmish; and that he conceavd the Generall was endeavoring

to gaine the wind from the rebels. This was seconded by the report of tuo or three more of my guards. I defird I might be permitted to goe a litle from that place, and looke upon the Kings forces, assuring them I wold tell them my opinion freele; this they granted. I saw the infantrie and left wing of the horſe take up their ground, for the right wing had done it before. I rejoyced to ſee them ſo numerous; and then I told my guards, that the Generall would force them to fight that very night, and that he intended to give them faire play, for he had taken onlie the halfe of the wind to himſelfe, and had left the other halfe for them; for the wind blew from the weſt.

When both parties were readie to advance, (for the rebels had changed their ground,) one Vetch, who was their pretended quarter-maſter, came and told my guards, that it was thought fitting that they and I ſould come from the hill, and ſtand behind their bodie, onlie, as he ſaid, to make a ſhow. We did ſo, bot by the way we met with Mr Welch and Mr Semple, who were goeing to take that advantage of ground which we formerlie had; and by doeing ſo, I thought both of them had provided indifferentlie well for their oune ſafetie. I ſtayd a litle with Mr Semple, who ſaid to me, “ Now, Sir James, that which we have beene diſputting with you this fortnight bypaſt, ſince you were our priſoner, ſhall be decided in a very ſhort time.” “ It is too like,” ſaid I, “ bot whom blame you? If you had followd my advice, no blood bot mine had beene ſhed.” We had ſome more diſcourſe, not needfull now to rehearſe.

When I ſaw the encounter wold be inevitable, and that my guards were doubtfull of the event, I thought it hie time to propoſe that to them which I had long premeditated, and which none of them could

at that nick of time reveale without their oun danger. My friends, said I, brusklie, " the day will be either yours or ours. If yours, I am still your prisoner, and I beleve I shall not be long troubled with you after your victorie. If the day proves ours, your lives and mine are in equall danger. If then the Kings forces gaine the victorie, defend you me from the violence of your partie in the flight, and I shall assure you of your lives."

To this proposition the eight who were with me, (for the other eight had left me to my fortune,) readily assented. " Then," said I, " put your swords in your left hands, and hold up your right hands to heaven, and let both you and me sueare the performance of our mutuall promises." This was presently done; " And who will now say," said I, " that I am not a Covenanter?" Not long after this, we might heare Mr Welch and Mr Semple cry out very loudly and very often, " The God of Jacob, the God of Jacob," without adding any more. This was, because they saw our commanded men give some ground; my very latlie suorne guards echoed the same words, " The God of Jacob, the God of Jacob." I asked them what they meant. They answered, Could I not see the Lord of Hostes fighting for them? I told them then very passionately, that they understood not their oun condition, for they might see that party, which they thought was beaten, rally and stand. They could not but see the whole bodie of our foot, and left wing of our horse, advance with much courage and in very good order, with trumpets sounding, and drums beating. " And in one word," said I, " if your partie doe not reele, runne and fly within one quarter of ane houre, then I shall be contented you pistoll me." It fell out so, that thogh the rebels, for their number, fought desperately enough, yet it pleased the

Lord that they were beaten, and their horſe fled apace. Whill I thought to make uſe of this opportunitie, came Canon of Mondroget, bleeding very faſt, for wounded he was. He had profeſſed kindnes to me formerlie for ſome curteſies I had done to ſome neere friends of his ; bot he told me then, that I muſt goe with him. I anſwered, that I was ſo pitiſullie ill mounted that I could not ride up with him ; beſides he knew I had no ſpurre allowd me, wherby I might helpe my nagge to runne. Bot he replyd, it was probable ſome of their officers might be made priſoners, and that I might helpe by exchange to relieve them ; therfor forward I muſt goe, for he neither could or would leave me behind him, and tooke God to witnes, it was much againſt his will. I told him, that ſince ſure it was he could not get me forward with him as I was mounted, and his partie being routed, and himſelfe wounded, it wold be no advantage to him to kill a perſon who had never done him any injurie, whatever other crimes were layd to his charge ; and with that I lookd over my ſhoulder, (for my guards ſtill forced me to ride after him,) and ſaw our horſe purſueing eagerlie enough, and were not farre from us. Then I calld to Mondroget, and adviſd him to looke about, and ſee who was purſueing him, telling him it was now more time to ſave his oune life, then to ſeeke after ane other mans. This advice he followd by galloping away. Foure more of my guards had left me out of feare ; the other foure were ſoone perſuaded to turne with me. I then commanded a drummer of mine, who had waited conſtantlie upon me, to tell any officer he met with, that I was there. He rencounterd with Alexander Cokburne, a ſervant of my Lord Duke Hammiltons, who was well armd and mounted. He came to me with much kindnes, and gave me and my priſoners, (for ſuch were now

my guards,) the word and the signe, and conducted me to my Lord Duke. His Grace was pleas'd to reffave me with much civilitie and favour, and entertaind me with expreffions of fo much kindnes as I doe reallie acknowledge not to have deferved. He gave order likewise that my prifoners fould be kindlie ufed, till nixt day they were deliverd to the foot guards ; and not long after, upon my humble fupplication, had their lives and liberties granted them.

I was told here, that the rebells had rallyd, and that Lieutenant Generall Drummond was calling for the troopes to advance to him, and the foot to follow. I was easilie perfuaded to beleieve thefe news to be true, and therfor refolved to impart them to E. Linlithgow, whom I could easilie find out by the burning matches of his regiment, for now the day was fpent. My lord was afoot, and it was fome time before the kindnes of his officers and fojors did permit me to falute him. His lordship wellcomd me very affectionatlie, and I found he had draune up his regiment on the other fide of the hill, where the rebells formerly flood, and was there attending the motions of a partie of men, which he faw on the top of a hie adjoyning hill. Bot when I had given his lordship affurance that thefe he faw could be no other bot countrey people, in regard I knew the rebells had no referve ; he marchd with his regiment ftraight to the Lieutenant Generall, with much cheerfullnes and alacritie, and was immediatlie followd by E. Kellie. Bot the Lieutenant Generall haveing told me, that upon his advance with the horfe the enemy was difperfd, both horfe and foot went to quarters that night. Nixt day I had the good fortune to meet with the Generall, Lieutenant Generall, and many lords and other perfons of qualitie, who all of them did with much kindnes and hu-

manitie congratulate my well neere dispaire of libertie ; which was very refreshing to me, after a short but sad tryall of the vicissitude and instabilitie of humane affaires ; for all which I give to God the praise and the glorie to whom it duellie belongs.

End of the Relation made to the Earle of Rothes, His Majesties  
His Commiffioner.

The Narration continues.

HERE was an end of the Rebellion and my imprisonment, but not of all my misfortunes. Thogh at my returne to Edenburgh, I found persons of all ranks and qualities professe kindness to me, and seemd to be glad I had escapd so eminent a danger, yet everie man is not to be taken at his word ; the thoughts and designs of men are knowne to none but to him who hath keepd it as his prerogative, to know the heart. The King havinge bene perswaded before, that no insurrection was, or wold be intended against the present established government, was easilie induced to beleieve that my severitie, or at best my undiscreeet zeale, had occasiond the commotion. But yet it was not time to lay this at my doore ; something els must be done before.

It must be rememberd, what I fould have spoke of before, that about the month of August 1666, his Majestie havinge open warre with three dangerous enemies, France, Denmark and Holland, had, for the defence of his kingdome of Scotland, cauld his regiment of foot guards be

made up ten companies, each to confist of one hundreth men ; besides his castles, over whom he appointed E. Linlithgow to be Colonell, myfelfe to be Lieutenant Colonell, and Colonell Urrey to be Sergant Major. He appointed also Generall Dallyell to raife a foot regiment of ten companies ; and his pleasure was, that ten troopes of horfe, besides the tuo which were allreadie raifd, fould be speedilie levied, over all which forces he orderd the fame Dallyell and Lieutenant Generall Drummond to command, the first in qualitie of Lieutenant Generall, and the second of Major Generall.

So foone as I came to Edenburgh, I intreated Generall Dallyell to call a councell of warre, wherin my deportment in these places where I had beene, might be impartiallie examined ; and if I were guiltie of these crimes that were publikelie talkd of, I might accordinglie be sentenced and punished ; if not, that I might have ane approbation of what I had done. This was denyd me severall times, in regard there was no complainer, accuser, or accusation against me. Heerupon I addrest myselfe to the Privie Councell, my Lord Commiffioner not being returned from Court, and humblie beseechd their Lordships to heare and cognosce on any thing was said, or might be said against me. About this time, a libell was scatterd up and doune against me, wherin what blacke malice could invent or disgorge against myselfe, or any of these parties which had beene under my command, was set doune in the darkeft dy. I answered it, and all its parts, and in all its dimensions, as I have allreadie said in my Relation. I intreated the Privie Councell, since there was none that appeared against me, except a *fama clamorosa*, and that libell, to which none could be found to affixe his name, that the libell itselfe, and my anfuere to it, might be examin'd ; and

that thereafter, their Lordships wold come to a sentence of approbation or condemnation of my proceedings. Upon this, the Councell appointed three of their number, to wit, my Lord Bellenden, my Lord Renton, and Sir Robert Murray, late provost of Edenburgh, to examine the whole matter, and make a report to them. This was accordinglie done; and after my Lord Commiffioners returne, the report was made, that till the libeller did prove his paper, I was to be justified in all I had done. Now the libeller, even when a yeare thereafter I was brought on the stage, and that he had a faire time offerd him to play his game above boord against me, never appeard personallie or by proxie, by word or by writ, directlie or indirectlie. And thogh Naphtali, in his infamous booke, hath set doune that libell almost verbatim, and will perswade his reader that it was a true relation, and that my anfuere to it consisted onlie of negatives and denyalls, yet let any peruse my anfuere, (and many copies I have given of it,) they will find Naphtali as great a liar in that, as he is in most of the passages of that booke which he wrote against all that are in authoritie, from the lowest to the hiest; for there are many things in the libell, which in my anfuere I acknowledged to be true, and that the actors of them were punished by me, as having done things without my warrand. Many things I acknowledged to have beene done by myselfe, for which I was warranted by my instructions. Many things, indeed, I absolutlie denied, because I knew them, *ex certissima scientia*, to be lyes and calumnies. Many things were alleadged in the libell to have beene committed which, thogh true, could never have reflected on me, in regard I never heard either the actors or the crimes complained of, till I red them, first in the written libell, and then in printed Naphtali.

By example, where was my fault, if any unchristian horsman under my command, gave the remainder and crums of their dinners to their dogs, not alloweing any of them to the children of their landlords? Or if any barbarous fojors (who fould have beene at church themselvs,) did beate some countrey men, whom they found praying among the rockes, on the Lords day? Or if any prophane and godles trooper said, he wold recommend his camerad, who was a dying, by his letter to a friend of his who was in hell, to provide him good winter quarters; how could these, I say, reflect on me, who never heard of them? Indeed, if complaints had beene made to me, and I had neglected to have punished such offenders, I had deserved to have beene banished out of all Christian societie for ever. Bot these things are not so much as mentioned in all these depositions which the yeare after were taken, and upon oath too, from all the people in Galloway and Niddsdail, where I had quartered; and it is not at all probable such complaints wold have beene smothered, where not onlie the people had a libertie, bot an encouragement, to speake what they pleased against me. Bot well may the nameles libeller, and shameles Naphtali write what they please, so long as they conceale their names, which I never did, nor intends to doe, from any thing I ever wrote in my life.

Bot the libeller is more to be excused than Naphtali, for the first had vented his libell before I was prisoner, and therefore knew not what the Rebels knew afterwards, when they had red my commission, instructions, and all my papers at Damellintoun; where they confessed I had not done so much by halfe as by my orders I might have done. They then acknowledged, I nor my partie had not got the fourth part of the money wherewith I was charged. This the libeller, I say, did

not know, when he wrote his libell. Bot Naphtali could not bot know it before he wrote that impudent booke of his, being he could not bot have learned it from the rebels, his deare correspondents. Yet wold he choose rather against truth and his oune conscience, to grope after the libeller in the darke, then make use of the light he might have borrowd from his oune beloved partie. What a monstrous foume did they make up, no lesse than seventeene thousand pounds sterline, that I and my parties had got in moneys, meate, quarterings and bonds; yet the depositions of all those that ever I had celd or quarterd on, being exactlie taken on oath in the end of the yeare 1667, declares them impudent and shameles lyars; for it is yet to be seene in the councell office, that all which was pretended to have beene taken in three yeares time in cesse, quarter, meate and drinke, moneys and bonds, yea, and irregular actions and plunderings, did not exceed tuo thousand seven hundredth and fiftie pounds sterline, not the sixth part of the libeller and Naphtalis foume. Bot they knew themselvs that wrong account is no payment; bot to speake truth, I thinke I have duelt too long with such false accountants.

After this, I petitiond my Lord Commiffioner and the Councell for ane approbation. Severall lords preffd it with strong reasons, bot most said, that the Councell haveing given me no commiffion, could not judge whether I had walkd according to my instructions or not. Bot notwithstanding that, I was put in hopes to obtain my desire at that time; yet he who had given me the commiffion by which I had acted, did nothing at all for me.

After I came out of prifon, so soone as convenientlie I could, I petitioned the Councell for these prifoners who had beene of my guards,

as is set doune in my relation. The Councell referd the matter to the Generall, who, at my intercession, and their takeing the declaration, gave them their lives and liberties, and his passes to goe home, and I gave each of them a litle money to carry them to their houses. One more, who had beene my intelligencer, my Lord Commiffioner, at my humble sute, savd from hanging at Aire, and therafter gave him his libertie.

After so pitiefull a toyle, I was adviced to purge; and this hinderd me to goe west with my Lord Commiffioner, when he marchd with the forces to reduce that countrey to order; bot I followed him soone after, and waited on him at Glasgowe when he came backe from Aire. Some fixe and threttie or therby of the rebels were hangd at Edenburgh, Glasgowe and Aire. The rest, who were above a hundreth, escaped one way or other. And now I appeale to Mr Naphtali himselfe, if any of these fixe and threttie ever mentioned my name in their speeches at their executions, or blamd me for oppression, or directlie or indirectlie insinuated that I had occasiond the insurrection. None knows better then Naphtali, who hath very carefullie collected all their testimonies, (as he calls them,) perhaps pend the most of them.

Generall Dalrymple's foot regiment lay a while at Aire, I thinke till June 1667. The regiment of guards was appointed to march to Edenburgh; fixe companies lay in the Canongate, and I with foure more did ly at Lieth. It was dureing the convention of estates, who, by his Majesties command, were assembled to find out meanes to entertaine the late levied foot and horse, which were not to be a militia very long. Upon the eleventh of Februaire, at twelve of the clocke at night, I was calld away in hafte to Glasgowe to my wife, who had taken both a sud-

den and a dangerous disease, which was indeed the effect of that melancholie she had contracted for my imprisonment ; for thogh her carriage dureing that affliction was that which became both a sober and a christian woman, yet grieve had got so deepe ane impressiō in her heart, that she could not overcome it, no not with my restoration to libertie. I stayd three weeks with her ; and indeed all the crosses that had ever befallen me, and the last one too, which was one of the greatest, seemd no thing to me in compariō of that I then sufferd, by the sad apprehensiō I had to be separated from so deare and so precieus a yokefellow. It pleasd God she betterd, and the phisitians assuring me there was no more danger, I returnd to my charge at Lieth. Bot the very nixt day after my comeing, I was advertisd that she was fallen in a dangerous relapse. I returnd to Glasgōw, haveing first causd show my Lord Commissiōner, the Generall, and E. Linlithgow, the cause of my suddē departure. At my arriveall at Glasgōw, I found her heavilie sicke ; some intervalls of ease she had, bot both few and short. I stayd three weekes with her the second time, till it pleasd the Lord to better her condition so farre, that the phisitians once more thought my longer stay needles. This mercy comforted me more than my late misfortune had afflicted me.

When I came to Edēburgh in Aprile, I found the regiment of guards was removd to Fife, to defend that coast against forreine invasion. Everie companie had a toune allowd for quarter, and mine had St Andrews. I lookd on all the companies in passing, before I came to St Andrews, the Archbishop wherof I found very sicke of a tertian. Nothing past that summer in Scotland, of acts of hostilitie worthie remembrance, except that Van Gent, one of the Vice-admiralls of Hol-

land, with tuo and threttie gallant men of warre, came up the Firth ; who, having spent to no purpose, above one thousand shot of canon at Burnt Iland, and killd onlie one fisher at the Weims, returnd that same night, haveing both wind and tide to carry him away. In Burnt Iland were my Lord Commiffioner himfelfe, E. Linlithgow, and tuo companies of foot ; a troope of horfe comeing to them fhortlie after. At Kircaldie, was Colonell Urrey with tuo foot companies more ; the other fixe companies were with me at the Eli, a place moft fit for them to land at. Trulie, if that Hollander had put it to the hazard to have landed his foot, which in fo many vessells could be no fewer then three thousand, at any place bot where we were, I thinke in all probabilitie he might have plunderd and burnd the moft, if not all the touns of that coaft, the countrey not being in any kind of pofture of defence. Bot the same Van Gent, as they fay, behavd himfelfe more advantageouflic for his mafters, and more miffortunatlic for England that same fummer at Chattum. Many other alarms we had, bot they provd all falfe ones, and it was well fo ; for if we had beene handfomlic attackd, we might have had juft reafon to have had more then the halfe of the feare.

About Lambes of the yeare 1667, his Majeftie haveing concluded a firme peace with all thefe neighbours of his who had made warre againft him, to ease his kingdome of Scotland of the great burthen lay on it, for the maintenance of fo great a militia, he orderd all his troopes of horfe except tuo, to be difbanded, and Generall Dallyells regiment of foot likewise. In the beginning of September, he commanded three companies of the ten wherof his regiment of guards confifted, to be fent to France, the Captaines therof haveing belonged formerlie to

Lord George Douglas in that kingdome. The fifteenth day of September was appointed for them to march from Enfter to Burnt Iland, to reffave what was oueing them, and then to goe a fhipboord. Bot moft of the fojors haveing ane averfion from the French fervice, and preying on the Captaines weakenes, who were Melvill, Ritherfurd and Lieth, mutined, refufing to march, and calling imperiouflic for their pay. If the Captaines had beene either wife or liberall, they might have engaged moft of all their fojors to goe with them to France, by giveing each of them a croune or tuo at moft, in hand, as levie money, and fo both have prevented the mutinie, and carried over their companies; for the King had declard he wold force none of them to goe. Bot as avarice is the root of all iniquitie, fo it provd heere; for the narrow hands of the Captaines loft them both their liveliehoods and reputations. Neither did they take any courfe befitting militarie men, to compefce the mutinie. Tuo of them fled, the third was detaind in the qualitie of a prifoner, never one of the three ever offering to draw a fuord. The reft of the officers fhifted for themfelvs. The tuo that thought they had fped well by haveing efcapd, ftayd at Leven and refrefhd themfelvs and horfes, at all leifure, without fo much as acquainting the Earle of Rothes, who was Captaine Generall, or E. Linlithgow, who was their Colonell, thogh the firft was at Balgonie within four miles of them, the fecond at Edenburgh; or did they ever offer to fend to me, who was their Lieutenant Colonell, thogh they knew well enough where I might be found. They went therafter to Kircaldie, and after a breathing, one of them went to Edenburgh, and the other to my Lord Chancloer. Mellvill rencountering by chance with a fervant of mine, wrote to me, in what condition he had left Enfter; this letter came to

a gentlemans house where I was, about twelve a clocke at night. I wrote instantlie to Colonell Urrey, to bring E. Linlithgows companie from Kircaldie, and his oune from Difart, with him to the Eli, where I fould, God willing, meet him. I wrote also to Saint Andrews, for my oune companie to march with all haste thither.

Nixt morning I rode to the Eli, where I found Sir George Curror sicke and bedfast, bot his companie in armes and in good order, as was also Captaine Whites at Pittenweim. I sent Lieutenant Leviston of Westquarter, who belonged to these mutinous companies, to tell the mutineers that I was come to heare and redresse their grievances, and therfor requird them to meet me without the toune in the field. They returnd me anfuere, that for severall reasons they could not leave the toune, bot I fould be very wellcome to come in to them. I did so, and was met at the entrie by threttie musketeers, for my honor, said they, to convoy me to the shore, where I found them all in armes, with their collors flying. I was enviroind round, and so close, that I could not get my horse movd from the place where I stood. I perceavd the mutinie had comd to a great heighth, for they had chosen their officers and speakers, and presented me with a petition directed to E. Linlithgow, and in his absence, to me. I harangud them, and demonstrated to them the ouglines and follie of this action of theirs; I cryd up their former loyaltie and services, and advised them not to staine the reputation of them by this tumultuarie and unadvifed rashnes of theirs, which I wold not tearme mutinie, wherof I knew so gallant men could not be guiltie. I did not faile likewise to shew them, that I knew how to force the most disobedient of them to duetie, bot hopd they wold be wiser as to put a neceffitie on either me, or these above me, to make use

of our pouer. I rallied and made merrie with some of them, and they made sport with me ; and in end, after many discourfes, I promisd they fould be payd at Burnt Iland all was duellie oweing to them, and that none of them fould be forced to goe a fhipboord againft his will. They defird to be payd and difbanded there where they were ; this I wold by no meanes grant. Their mufkets were chargd with tuo balls at leaft, many with three ; fome of the mutineers gave fire upon the houfes over my head. At length I commanded drums to beate, and crying, " God fave the King," which they likewife did, I orderd the col- lora to follow me ; and without more noyfe, carried them fairlie to Leven, feven miles from the place where they were, and the nixt day to Burnt Iland, where they were all difarmd and difbanded.

So foone as my Lord Chancellor knew of the mutinie, he wrote to E. Linlithgow to come over out of Edenburgh to appeafe it. Strange and very ftrange it was, he wold not write to me, who, he knew, was within foure miles of him. And as ftrange it was in E. Lithgow, to thinke that I wold be fo tame as to fit ftill and doe nothing till he came ; for fo foone as he arrivd at Burnt Iland, he wrote to Saint Andrews, (thinking I was there,) for me to meet him at Enfter. His letter I got on the 16th of September, at night, when I was quartering the mutineers at Leven. A drummer, who was ane Englifhmen, and feven or eight more, who had beene the ringleaders of the mutinie, were feizd on at Burnt Iland ; for I had promisd indemnitie to none of them, neither indeed did ever any of them feeke it from me. Bot by a private advice from the Privie Councell, I fuffered them all to make their escapes, a month or therby thereafter, out of the tolbooth of Leith.

A month and more before this mutinie, Generall Dallyell acquainted me, that E. Kellie had told him, that there was a resolution to take my charge from me, and to give it to him. I beleeeve his Lordship got a very rough reprimend from some of his friends, for not keeping his owne secrets better. I was apt to beleeeve there was such a designe, and therfor resolvd rather to goe out, then to be thrust out. I made a proffer of my charge to my Lord Kellie, provided I might be Major, and Colonell Urrey eldest Captaine, as we had formerlie beene. My Lord had good reason to thanke me for so kind ane offer. In the meane time, I movd my Lord Chancellor to write something of it to E. Lauderdale; who returnd him anfuere, that he had never heard of any such thing before.

Sir Robert Murray, Privie Counsellor and Commiffioner of the Treasurie, told me, much about that time, that the King haveing heard some grievous complaints of me, intended to order his Privie Councell to examine the matter. I told him, I wonderd any complaint shoud come to the King of me, since none was made to the Councell, to whom it properlie belonged, to take notice of such affaires; it not being ordinarie to runne directlie to the King, *per saltum*, in contempt of that authoritie which he had establihed in Scotland. He anfuerd, the King did in these things as he pleasd. I said, I thought it very strange, I was not brought sooner on the stage, it being now neere a twelve-month since I came out of prison. He gave me indeed a reason, which hugelie increasd my admiration. So long, said he, as the armie stood, you were too strong for your accusers, neither durst they be seene against you; bot now, that the forces, for most part, are disbanded, the Councell may take notice of you with lesse trouble. I replyd, that

then I had beene miftaken formerlie, in thinking that the armie wold rather have affifted juftice to be adminifterd, then have given any obfttruction to it ; and with that we parted.

Meane while E. Kellies friends thought it fit he fould gett me to ratifie under my hand the proffer I had made him, which, they thought, being bot verball, I might avouch or deny as I pleaſed. I reſolvd they fould ſee I was a man of my word ; and therfor immediatlie, by way of letter, made my former offer, and that without any heſitation. My letter was ſent to Court, and instantlie his Majeſties order came to the Councell, to ſee E. Kellie admitted Lieutenant Colonell, and Colonell Urrey and myſelfe returne to our former charges ; which was accordingly done, in preſence of my Lord Bellenden and Sir Robert Murrey, in the ſands of Lieth, the 2d of November, 1667.

I thought, by this addreſſe of mine, I had conjurd away the ſtorme prettie well ; bot I had caſt up a wrong account, for a letter from the King, of the date of the 17th of November, came to the Councell, in which, among other things, he commands their lordſhips to call me before them, to examine my deportments ſtrictlie, and what moneys I had exacted, and make a report of all to his Majeſtie. The Councell appoints a committee of nine of their number, which conſiſted of the principall counsellors, foure or five wherof were of the long robe. At this time, neither my Lord Chancellor nor E. Tweeddaill were comd from Court. I am brought before this committee, and once I intended to have pleaded, that I could not be accuſd of any thing I had done dureing the time I was Lieutenant Colonell, being his Majeſties conſerring the new charge of Major upon me infinuated a pardon of any crime I formerlie could have beene guiltie of ; bot I reſolvd not to claſh

with the King in any thing, much leffe to quible in a bufienes which concernd myfelfe fo very neare.

The Committee was civill to me; the Prefident of the Seffion being chofen Prefident, cauld offer me a chaire, which I abfolutlie refused, being, I faid, I was before them in the qualitie of a defender, and they were the representatives of my judges. They inquired, which of the tuo I thought moft convenient to be done, in order to his Majesties commands; whether to referre the matter to my oune relation, which they hopd wold be ingenuous, or if they fould fend one of their oune choofing to Niddfdaill and Galloway, to affist fuch gentlemen of that countrey as the Councell fould impouer, to take depofitions againft me. I freelie told them, the fhorteft way wold be to take my oune relation, which I promifd fould be a faithfull one; for I wold acknowledge the reffait of as much as all the depofitions they could get wold amount to; and after the conclufion of the whole bufienes, they both found and acknowledged that to be true, what I then told them. Bot at this time they refolvd both to take my relation, and fend one from themfelves alfo; for it feemes they thought it was good to be fure. Mr James Thomfone, a commiffare and ane exchequer man, was defird to goe; bot he refused the employment, faying he wold not fo badlie requite the favours he pretended to have reffaved from me. Bot ane other was quicklie found, for fiftene fhillings fterline *per diem*, one Buntein, ane under cleark of the exchequer. Him they difpatch with all neceffare orders and inftructions. This act of councell, to invite, defire, nay, conftraine men to complaine, hath had, for any thing I know, bot few or no precedents. My firft compeareance was on the 27<sup>th</sup> of November, and Buntein was orderd to returne againft the firft of Januare 1668.

I defird libertie till then, to goe and stay at Glasgow with my wife, who was then sicke, which was fairlie granted me. Nixt day I rode thither, where indeed I found my deare wife, (who had had bot litle health all that summer, and whom I had not seene in eight months before,) sicke of a lent feaver. About Chriftnas, she being somewhat convalesced, I tooke my leave of her, and returned to Edenburgh, there to waite for Buntein, of whose motions, actings and practises against me, I had sufficientlie good intelligence; and both he, and these who sent him, did find I was not so hated as they had fancied, bot had acquird the affection of the best and honnestest of the gentrie, who faild not to let me know all that passd wherin they conceavd I might be concernd. At my comeing to Edenburgh, I found by the committee of the councell, that Buntein pretended he had not yet done all his busienes, thogh the time prefixed to him was well neere expired. It is like he defird the continuation of his daylie salarie of fiftene shillings sterline; and I found the committee was not averse to allow him it for a longer time, perhaps thinking the longer time they gave him, the greater feats he wold be able to doe against me. Bot his strength was spent, and he came backe in the beginning of Januare. I must not forget to tell, how the gentlemen, who were deputed by the Councell for takeing depositions against me or my partie, did examine all or most on oath; a thing in itselke illegall, at least seldome or never practisd, for a mans oath in his oune cause proves nothing; yet this these gentlemen did, not without my private assent, for I found a benefite by it; the malice of many of the phanaticks being such, as they wold have declard any thing against me, or these under my command, if they had not bene restraind by the dreadfull awe of ane oath.

After the Committee had seene and perused all the declarations and depositions which Buntein had brought, one of them (whom I need not name,) drew up fiftene grieveances of illegall and disfavouable proceedings of mine, all of them grounded, as they said, upon these declarations. This monstrous paper of grieveances was a month a hatching ; then I was sent for, and desired to answer them. I told the lords, that these declarations, on which the grieveances were pretended to be grounded, must be all legallie proven, els they could doe me no hurt. Bot leaft their Lordships shoud thinke, that I tooke advantage of the impossibilitie of that probation, (for no witnesses could be led against me bot these who were *socii criminis*,) I was readie to take the paper and answer it, provided they gave me time, and I desired a month. Bot Sir Robert Murrey told me, that it being now in Februaire, and the Lords to goe to the countrey in the beginning of March, the ordinarie time of vacancie, so long a time could not be allowed me ; yet all or most consented to a fortnight. I desired to have the declarations or depositions given me, that I might see how cleerlie the grieveances were deduced from them ; bot I was told, I shoud have acceffe to the Councell Chamber where these papers were keepd, bot they could not suffer them to be carried elsewhere. I thought this was severe, not to give it a worse name ; bot I did not value much this refuseall, for I had a perfite copie of them all sent me by my friends, which I resshaved before Buntein arrivd at Edenburgh with the principall.

Before the fortnight came to ane end, E. Tweeddail returnd from Court ; his Lordship was appointed to be ane additionall member of my committee. The time prefixd to me being expird, I appeard ; where I found E. Tweeddail, after debate, voted to preside. He did not for-

beare to exerce that charge with vigour enough, yet with very much discretion and civilitie, which sweetned the bitter pill I knew I was to swallow ; for I perceavd that thogh by not acknowledging myselfe guiltie, I should save my reputation a litle, yet in the end I must succumbe ; for the promise of my charge to E. Kellie told me I was precondemned. I gave in my answers, which were read and heard attentivelie enough ; bot some of them relating to my commission and instructions, I was desired to show them to the Committee. I told them, that which was true, that I had neither of them, for when the rebels tooke myselfe, they tooke also them and all my other papers. And indeed, when I was first questiond, I was not master of them, thogh afterwards, with much paines and trouble, and the powerfull mediation of moneys, I got them againe in my hands. The reason I wold not show them was, that I feared matter of complaint might be pickd out of them, which wold not at all save me ; and this I was sensible enough of, that the showing them might wrong my Lord Chancellor, and doe me no good ; for I was told that I was lyable to punishment for giving obedience to illegall commands. I was questiond thereafter about some particulars of my written defences, as also concerning two written declarations given in against me by two malicious and infamous persons, not without the instigation of my Lord Cochran, one of my committee, and consequentlie one of my judges ; which declarations I might easilie have repeld, by telling the Lords that I wold answer none of them, till the base accusers undertooke to prove them, which was purlie impossible. Bot to them and all other interrogatories, I gave such returns as were interpreted, even by these who were none of my best friends, to be moderate, submisse, ingenuous and can-

dide ; and indeed I was informed, some of them said I had given a full demonstration I was not the man I was characterd to be, proud, passionate, haſtie and furious. And yet I confeſſe, my humour never was, nor is not yet, one of the calmest ; when it will be, God onlie knowes ; yet by many sad passages of my life, I know that it hath bene good for me to be afflicted. By this testimony of theirs I was a gainer, though I loſt my charge. I was desir'd to tell them extemporarie, how much the free quarter, meate and drinke, bonds and money, exacted by me and my parties, the three severall times I was in Galloway, might extend to. I told their lordships, I knew well enough that the depofitions of all parties concerned, in which were ſet downe plunderings, did not exceed three and threttie thousand pounds Scots ; of that I could abate, even in their owne judgments, five thousand pounds ; neither was I bound to acknowledge the rest, for it could never be made out againſt me ; yet to ease their lordships of further trouble, and ſhow them my owne ingenuitie, I wold charge myſelfe with threttie thousand pounds. They openlie declar'd that they thought I had ſpoke ſo ingenuouſlie, that more could not be chargd upon me. Where are then the ſeventeene thousand pounds ſterline wherewith the infamous libeller and nameles Naphtali charge me ? Haveing bene keepd by the Committee above foure houres, I was diſmiſd ; and indeed I will ſay, that the whole time of my tryall I was dealt with as a gentleman ; for they never offerd to imprifon, arreſt or bayle me, or yet did ever command me to forbear the exerciſe of my charge, for I . . . . on my command, till the very laſt minute that I layd doune my commiſſions.

My buſines now drauing neere a cloſe, a report was draune up, to be ſent to his Maſtie by one of the members of the Committee, (whom

I need not name ;) and as to the rest, some of them got some harsh words expungd, and made the report something smother, as indeed at best it was bot bad enough. The day it was to be red in the Privie Councell, I petitiond their lordships that I might be permitted to see it, before it was sent to the King. This many of the Lords thought very modest and most reasonable; others wold not heare it, alledging, it was to lay the Committee and me in a ballance, and to make them my partie, and consequentlie send them all to the barre as well as me. The matter for a while was well enough debated, bot carried in the negative, and declar'd I should not see the report till it was sent away. Bot to please me, they orderd, after it was off, a copie of it to be given me, and so indeed there was one nixt day in the afternoon, when I beleve the post of the principall was the length of Morpeth. Before I proceed further, it will be fit to give a true copie of the Report, by which the fifeteene grievances, wherwith I was formerly charged, are not onlie set doune in base characters, bot are convoyd to the King with fixe more to accompany them.

A true Copie of the Report sent to his Majestie concerning me, from  
Edenburgh the nineteeneth of Februaire 1668.

The Lords of his Majesties Councell did no fooner reslave his Majesties commands, in his gracious letter of the tuentie one of November last, for takeing exact examination of Sir James Turners deportment in the west, bot they orderd and impouerd a Committee of their number to inquire diligentlie into them; and by their Report it appears, that,

upon information from the Stewartrie of Kirkcubright, given in upon oath of parties, or their maisters, or their neighbours, many illegall exactions have beene made, and disorders committed. Such as, Firft, quartering of fojors for levieing fines and impositions. Secondlie, Exacting cefse for quartering money for more fojours then were actuallie present, fomtimes for double the number or more, (and that befides free quarter for thefe present,) fomtimes 8 pence, fomtimes twelve pence, fomtimes 16 pence, and fomtimes more, for each man. 3°. Cefse exacted for diverfe dayes, fomtimes for eight, ten, or more, before the partie did actuallie appeare. 4°. Impofeing of fines, and quartering, without any previous citation, or heareing of parties. 5°. Fineing without due information from minifters. 6°. Fineing fuch as livd orderlie, as appeares by minifters teftificates. 7°. Fineing and ceffing for caufes for which there are no warrands from acts of parliament or counsell; as firft, baptifeing of children by outed minifters; fecondlie, baptifeing by neighbouring minifters, where the parifh church is vacant; thirdlie, for marrying by outed minifters; fourtlie, for keeping conventicles. 8°. Fineing for whole years preceeding his comeing to the countrey, and that after they had begun to live orderlie. 9°. Fineing fathers for their daughters baptifeing children by outed minifters, thogh forriffamiliate fix months before, and liveing in another parifh. 10°. Fineing without proportionating the foume with the fault. 11°. Fineing whole parifhes promifcuoullie, as well thofe that lived orderlie as thefe that did not. 12°. Fineing whole parifhes where there was no incumbent minifter. 13°. Fineing one that lay a yeare bedfast. 14°. Forceing bands from innocent people. 15°. Ceffing of people that were not fyned. 16°. Takeing away cattle and other goods. All thefe acts

are illegall mifdemeyors. Of other kinds there are, 17°. Agreeing for cefle and fines both in one foume, wherby accounts were confounded. 18°. Not admitting complainers who were cefd upon, to come to his prefence; alleadged to have beene his conftant cuftome. 19°. Permitting his fervants to take money for admitting people to him, and yet acceffe denyd. 20°. Increafeing the number of quartering fojourns after complaints. 21°. Exacting of moneys for removeing of fojourns after cefle and fynes were payd.

Everie one of the forgoeing articles is made out by information upon oath, which yet doth not amount to a legall prooffe; which, in moft of thefe cafes, will be difficult if not impoffible to obtaine, in regard that no witneffes can be had that are not lyable to exception, unles by examineing officers, fojourns and fervants, which wold take up much time and labour.

Sir James Turners defences as to fuch of the forgoing articles as he acknowledged, are commiffions and inftructions from the then Lord Commiffioner, for quartering to raife fines, for fineing fuch who forbore goeing to church, or married or baptifed by outed minifters, or keepd conventicles; and that upon the delation of credible perfons, and to preferre them to thefe of minifters. Bot he doth affirme, all his commiffions and inftructions were taken by the rebels, when he was made prifoner, and fo hath nothing to fhew for his vindication. And for all the other heads above written, he either denys matter of fact, afcribes the tranfactions to others, or pleades ignorance.

The foumes of money reflaved for fines and cefle, and bonds taken, he acknowledged to have amounted to be threttie thoufand pounds fcots. The foumes charged on him by the countrey, befides quartering,

comes to about threttie eight thousand pounds Scots ; wherin is not reckond what was exacted from any of those who rose in rebellion, and some parishes in Galloway from whence no information was returned.

And as to his surprisall, he sayth, Firft, he had bot fixtie fixe foot in these parts under his command. Secondlie, that they were all disperfed throw the countrey about the fines, so that there was not so many left with him as to keepe guard at his lodgeing, nay, not so much as one, some nights before. Thirdlie, that he had no order to keepe a guard about him, or to fortifie himselfe, though there be a strong house within the toune called the Castell, to which he might have retired with some thretteene sojourns that came in that night before he was taken. Fourthlie, that he had intelligence there was a riseing in the countrey ; and that a corporall of his was shot, who told him that there were divers persons got together, who had intelligence from the north of a riseing there, with ane intention to march to the citadell of Aire, and to feize it and the armes which had beene taken from the countrey. Fifthlie, that about midnight, he wrote to George Maxwell of Munches. Sixthlie, he sent orders to some more of his sojourns to meet him the next morning, intending towards Newgalloway, where the riseing was reported to be. Seventhlie, that he rose about fixe of the clocke that morning, bot being indisposed, lay doune againe, and being up in his goun about eight a clock, he was furrounded and taken.

This is all that can be expected for his Majesties present information concerning Sir James Turner. As to what further concerns the money he intromitted with, it may be lookd after, according to the way his Majestie shall appoint.

End of the Report.

The sending away of this Report to the King without permitting me to see it, was the hardest measure I met with the whole time of my tryall, and perhaps is an action that wants a precedent. I wrote an answer to that Report, and every article of it, and that so ingenuously and candidly that I could, to verify the truth of it, goe to death. But finding it was in vaine to show it to the Councell, now that the business was out of theirs, and in the Kings hands, and fearing, if I should send it to Court, either no use, or a bad use should be made of it, I only shew it to some of my friends. The copie of it follows.

My Answer to the Report.

The Report which the honourable Committee made to the Lords of his Majesties Privie Councell, and which their Lordships sent to his Majestie concerning me, had nothing in it on their parts but truth, neither entered it ever in my secretest thoughts to question the verities of it; I mean still, on their part; for they but reported these things that were alleadged against me, and many of them sworn by the parties. But because their lordships in that Report affirme, that no legall proofe was got, or could possibly be obtained, I shall beg libertie shortly, but verie ingenuously, to answer every article of that Report.

1°. The first I acknowledge to be true, and was warranted for it by the fourth article of my instructions, dated the 6th of March, 1666.

2°. I absolutely deny, that I ever gave order, permitted or conniv'd at any such exactions, neither was there ever any complaints of that nature brought to me; and the contrary of this, I say, will never be prov'd. My answer to the 7th and 8th grievances clears it fullie.

3°. I deny that ever any such thing was done by my order or connivence; and if it was done at all, it hath beene by secret transactions betueene the parties and the sojors, without my knowledge; neither was ever any such thing complained of, as is more fullie containd in my anfuere to the sixth grievance.

4°. The fourth I grant to be true, as being obliged to it by my orders, as appeareth by the formentiond fourth article of my instructions. Neither, indeed, was it possible to use any such previous citation or formall proceffe, nor was it needfull, the most of the parties acknowledging guilt.

5°. Ministers could not give due information of conventicle keepers; and I was obliged by my commiffion to cesse upon, and fyne such without the ministers, the thing being made cleere to me otherwise, as more fullie appeares in my anfuere to the third and fifth grievances.

6°. It neither can or ever will be provd, that I fynd or celd on any that livd orderlie. As to the ministers testificates, tuo instances were given in the grievances, the one of Keirick parish, which perhaps may be true, thogh I do not at all remember either the thing or the parish. The other is of Irongray, to which I shall speake in my anfuere to the ninth article. To both I say now, I was not obliged to regard testificats from neither minister or other man, after subscribed lists were given me, as appeares by the fourth article of my instructions.

7°. The seventh article is subdivided in foure. To the first I anfuere, I granted I did so, and was warranted for it by the first article of my orders, dated the 9th of May, 1666. To the second I say, it is a meere calumnie, for I exhorted all who had no minister of their owne, to goe to the next adjacent church, both for heareing the word, and getting

the benefite of the sacraments ; and never hinderd or dischargd any, provided the minifter who officiated was conforme ; if not, I could not permit it, being orderd to the contrare in the formentiond first article of my orders, dated the 9th of May, 1666. The third I grant, being warranted to it by the formentiond articles of my instructions. The fourth I grant, being warranted by the third article of my instructions, dated the 6th of May, 1666.

8°. I grant I did so with some wicked, malititious and obstinate contemners, whom the bishops and ministers gave me in their lists, for I was to be rul'd by them for the time when I beganne to cesse. Bot assur'dlie I find none whom they declared to have begunne to live orderlie ; for they thought it not enough that some, at my approach to them, declared they wold keepe the church afterward. Bot with whom the ministers were satisfi'd, so was I too. Bot neither they nor I were satisfi'd with the hipocriticall carriage of one of the worst of men, Steuart of Cullgruff, for whose sake this article is foysted in.

9°. The honorable Committee hath put in this article, upon a most unjust and false information. It is the busines of Irongray. First, it was no baptisme, bot a marriage. Secondlie, the woman was not foriffamiliated. Thirdlie, she livd in her fathers house, and not in any other parish. Fourthlie, the wedding dinner was keepd in her fathers house. Fifthlie, she was married by a nonconformist, haveing refused to be married by two conformists, who livd neerer her father then the other did. And this I was not to suffer, by the whole series of my instructions ; yet that there was some severitie used in that busines, I doe ingenuously confesse.

10°. To the tenth I say, if I did not proportionate the fomme to the

fault, it was done in favour of the partie, in not exacting so great a fine as his fault deserved; that ever I exceeded, is a groundles calumnie will never be proved, the contrare being acknouledgd by the phanatikes themselvs; and it is knoune, that at most, I never from the greatest transgressor exacted the halfe of the fines.

11°. This eleventh article was the first grievance, and the two instances of the parishes of Kirkcunzon and Anwith, will be so farre from proveing it, that they demonstrate the contrare. And the Earle of Niddfdaill, who had once the greatest share of the first, and Sir Alexander Mackulloch, who hath the greatest interest in the last, will testifie the contrare. I quarterd indeed on severall persons of these parishes, bot upon none bot deficient, as more fullie appears in my anfuere to the first grievance.

12°. I never find a whole parish, bot I grant I find some deficient in severall parishes where there were no incumbents; because they went not to the next churches where conforme ministers were, which they were bound to doe by the Act of Councell 1662.

13°. If the thretteenth article be provd, I shall acknowledge myselfe to be voyd both of christianitie and of humanitie; I have spoke to it fullie in my anfuere to the eleventh grievance.

14°. I never forced a bond from any, much lesse from innocent people; if any have accusd me of it, they were bound by law to prove it, which is purlie impossible

15°. I acknowledge I cessd on many whom I find not. It was upon promise of future obedience, and this I had power to doe by the third article of my instructions, dated the 9th of May, 1666. Bot I had no power to abate any thing of the sojors cesse, which the Councell had

alloued them ; bot, good God ! could any man have thought, that any favour I did these people, wold have appeard against me under the notion of a grievance.

16°. Such things were never done by my order, and when I knew the sojors had done it, I reftored the cattle and punished the sojors.

17°. This was sometimes done, at the earnest intreatie of the deficient, as an ease to them ; nor were accounts thereby confounded, for I payd the sojors their cefse duellie, and keepd the rest for fine, as is more fullie fet doune in anfuere to the eighth grievance.

18°. I never all my life refusd to admit people to me who had bufines with me, unles I have beene ficke. And my indisposition that summer was so frequent, that it is well enough knoune that, betueene the 20th of March and the middle of November, I was seven times let blood ; and so this grievance signifies litle, besides that it is false.

19°. I remember, some complaind that my servants tooke money to admit people to me ; bot I beleeve, never one of them said that I permitted them to doe so, so the article is very ill worded. Besides, if my servants did so, they had neither command, permission or connivance from me. I onlie shall say, it will be hard, if not impossible, for any man that is in publick trust or charge, to anfuere for all their servants escapes of that nature.

20°. If the article be meand, that the more obstinate the deficient was, the more sojors I quarterd on him, then it is true ; if otherwise, it is most false, neither will it ever be provd true ; in that sence the article holds it out.

21°. If this last article be provd, I shall be infamous ; yet such things being so frequentlie spoke of in the depositions, and chargd upon some

under my command, bot never upon myselfe, I am apt to beleeeve that some under me have abusd both the people and me, bot none ever haveing complaind of it, I could not redresse it.

As to what is spoke in the Report of what I said for my oun justification, I wish all I said to everie grievance had bene mentiond, as well as what I was accusd of. They are yet extant in the Councell Chamber.

The Report sayth, I acknouledgd 30,000 lb. Scots for quarter cefse moneys and bonds, and so I did. It sayth, moreover, that 38,000 lb. was charged on me by the countrey for cefse moneys and bonds, besides free quarter. Heere I am bound to animadvert to tuo things. First, there is a fallacie, for 38,000 lb. was chargd on me in the first examination by the Master of Herreis and Baldoun; which was so grosse and ouglie, that the Councell thought it not fitting to take up their measures by it, bot examind me upon the second report brought in by Buntein, which exceeded not 33,000 pound Scots, in which also was set up the sojors plunderings. Secondlie, that which the Councells Report calls free quarter, the countrey people calls cefse; and so free quarter and cefse are all one, which the Report seems to distinguish very disadvantageouslie for me. As to what I tooke from those that were in the rebellion, it was bot litle; bot it was not forgot to be given up by their friends to Buntein, which is obvious in many places of his papers.

For my surprisall, I have no more to say bot what I have said allreadie; bot the penner of the Report hath mistaken himselfe in these particulars. I never said I could fortifie myselfe in that strong house, (as he calls it) or Castle of Drumfries. If I had had intelligence of the rebells comeing, I wold have endeavord to defend the bridge, and not

a house, which could not be made defensible bot in a long time. Secondlie, I had no intelligence that there was any riseing in the countrey, otherwife I wold not have stayd in Drumfreis. The shooting of my corporall onlie alarmd me. Thirddie, my letter to Munches, was, that he, as stewart depute, wold looke after these rogues who had shot my corporall ; this is in my defences, bot omitted in the report. Fourthlie, the intelligence I had of a riseing in the north, was not at all to be trusted till further inquirie ; neither did I ever say, that I had heard the north countrey people intended to have taken the citadell of Aire. That sould have beene done by the west countrey men, if by any.

So ends my Anfuere to the Report.

Ten dayes, if I remember right, after the Report was to Court, namelie, on the seventh of March, my Lord Chancellor arrivd at Edinburgh. He was met with hundreths of the nobilitie, gentrie, burgesfes and foldierie. E. Linlithgow orderd me to reffave the word from him. He gave it me very publickly, without any ceremonie, which made many thinke the King had continued him Captaine Generall ; bot my nixt nights seekeing it from him cleerd the matter, for he told me that he was obliged to thanke my Lord Linlithgow for his civilitie, and that he had accepted of it the first night, in regard he knew it was done to honor him ; bot haveing layd doune his commiffion of Generall at Court, he wold not pretend to give the watch word any more.

That very night my Lord Chanclor came, arrivd a post who brought a letter from the King to the Councell, in which he orderd them to call me before them, and in his name to command me to lay

downe his commiffions which he had given me, and to call me to an account for what moneys I had reffaved ; and what I was found to be juftlie owing, to take it from me, and to put it to fuch pious ufes as they thought fitting. This was the refult of the Report. On the tenth of March, a macer was fent to the withdrawing roome privatlie, to defire me to goe into the Councell ; for the Lords were pleafd to ufe me with fo much refpect, as not to fuffer the macer to call publickly for me, or to fuffer any to enter with me, thogh both in fuch cafes be ordinarie. Being at the barre, my Lord Chancellor told me what his Majefties pleafure was. I had fullie refolv'd before with myfelfe, to vindicate his Majefties juftice by takeing fome guilt upon me ; for befides that I thought all loyall fubjects fould doe fo, I had reafon to imagine, if I fould plead not guiltie, I might be ufd feverly enough. I had therefore premeditated what to fay, which I utterd in thefe, or the like expreffions.

My Speech to my Lord Chancellor, and the Privie Councell, when I layd downe my Commiffions, the tenth of March, 1668.

My Lord Chanclor,

If ever it had beene in my pouer, as it was allways in my defires, to have done the King any acceptable peece of fervice, I fould never have beene fo vaine as to have valued it at a hier rate, then the paying a part, and bot a part, of that duetie I owed to his Majeftie. Yet let my endeavors be what they wold, they provd ftill unfuccefffull. Bot a greater miffortune then that hath befallen me. I have done the King difservice, for which I have defervd a fevere cenfure ; and certainlie.

my crime is so much the greater, that I have offended so good and so gracious a master ; yet, my lord, give me leave to say, that I never wickedlie, malicieouslie, or intentionallie wrongd his service. Some things were irregularlie done by these under my command ; bot because I did not know them all, I could not advert to them all. Bot some things were done by my selfe, which I do not offer now to justifie, bot I shall acknowledge that his Majestie might have proceeded with much rigour against me, and yet not have exceeded the bounds and limits of justice. Bot he hath beene graciously pleasd to incline rather to clemencie than severitie.

My lord, I am not indeed now so able to serve the King in any militarie employment as formerlie I have beene. My bodie with yeares and toyle is become crasie, and my spirit with some sad crosses and afflictions is brought low ; bot in what condition soever I shall heer-after be, my loyaltie to the King shall accompany me to my grave, and it shall be my incessant prayer to heaven, that his Majestie may live long, to raigne with his accustomed goodnes glorieously and happily over us.

My lord, some foure yeares since, his Majestie gave me a commiffion to be a Major of his guards of foot ; a yeare and a halfe agoe, and some more, I got a commiffion to be Lieutenant Colonell of these guards. In November last, the Earle of Kellie was appointed to be Lieutenant Colonell, and I againe Major ; for this last charge I had no commiffion, bot acted by vertue of the Kings letter to the Councill. The tuo commiffions are heere ; which, as I reffaved with much joy and gladnes, as testimonies of his Majesties undeserved favour towards me, so I doe now most willinglie and cheerfullie, without any reluctancie,

yet with all imaginable submission and humilitie, returne them backe.

So ended my Speech.

My Lord Chancellour haveing given me a signe to remove, nothing els was said to me then; perhaps the lords thought there was enough said at one time. I was thereafter orderd to give in my accounts to the Cleark Register, Hatton and Nithrie, or any tuo of them; and the 8th day of Aprile (which was nixt Councell day,) was indulged to me to make them readie. I went to Glasgou, and at my returne a day or tuo ere the Councell met, I deliverd my accounts to my Lord Register and Nithrie. After they had perusd them in the Councellhouse, I was calld in and desired to signe them; which I did, and attested them to be true according to my best memorie and judgment; and so I was dismissed by them. When the Councell day came, I was inquired privately, whether I wold sweare that these accounts were just or not. This I peremptorie refused, for, haveing lost my memorialls and papers, I might easilie erre in some particulars, and ane oathe sould be taken in judgment, truth and righteoufnes. Upon this anfuere, my Lord Register resolves to give them in to the Councell as they were. They were publikelie red there by their clearke; a copie wherof follows.

My Accounts given in to the Privie Councell the eighth day  
of Aprile, 1668.

My Lords,

The accounts that are charged on me, and the severall parties of

horſe and foot under my command, by the ſhyre of Niddifdail and ſteuartrie of Kirkcubright, extended, as I reckoned, to nine and tuentie thouſand and ſome odd hundreths of pounds Scots, thogh I know ſome will have them to amount to 33,000 lb. Scots ; yet in my anſuere to the abbreviation of the Report, they did not exceed eight and tuentie thouſand pounds. Bot when I was deſired by the honorable Committee of the Privie Councell, to declare ingenuouſlie what I thought the ſoldiers ceſſe, and the fines I exacted in bonds and moneys might amount to, my anſuere was, that they never could exceed thretie thouſand pounds ; and therfor I ſhall be contented the ſoume ſhall be calld ſo, thogh I am very ſure it will never be provd to be ſo.

I am now to divide that ſoume in ceſſe, in bonds, and moneys. As to the ceſſe, it wold be confiderd, that the ſecond time I was in Galloway, anno 1665, (for the firſt time I meddled with neither ceſſe nor fine) I ſtayd tuo months ; and the third time, which was anno 1666, I ſtayd full eight months, which makes in all ten months. It is impoſſible for me to give a precife account of what my ſoldiers reſſaved in ceſſe, which is, (as they call it there) 8d. *per diem*, and in meate and drinke, (which they call free quarter) 4d. *per diem* ; in all twelve pence *per diem* for everie foot ſojor, and halfe a croune a day for each horſman. Bot I ſhall offer to your lordſhips confideration, that it can not be juſtlie or rationallie thought that the foot ſojors exhausted leſſe then three pounds ſterline everie day, that is to ſay, allowance for threeſcore men, which was bot halfe my partie of foot ; for thogh ſometimes I had none at all on ceſſe, which was bot ſet doune, ſometimes not above the third part, yet ordinarilie, I had the moſt of my partie quarterd on deficientes, and ſometimes all of them ; as it happend,

when I was surpris'd at Drumfreis; so that, *communibus diebus*, I may most justlie reckon the cesse of the foot soldiers to be three pound sterline a day; *Inde*, for ten months, upwards of nine hundreth pounds sterline moneys; and it is undenyable, bot the cesses of the severall parties of the horse which I employed, extended to much more then one hundreth pounds sterline. Let then the cesse, which the soldiers of horse and foot got, wherof I might not defraud them, (haveing had pouer onlie to qualifie the fines,) be reckond to one thousand pounds sterline, which I shall easilie prove to be farre below that, which they got in money, meate and drinke.

The bonds which I deliverd to Mr Alexander Keith, and some inconsiderable ones, which were taine from me when I was made prisoner, I reckon to amount to thretteene thousand mearks.

It will then inevitablie follow, that I have refflavd of fines, no more in money then fourteene thousand mearks; and I doe averre, that more then that, if so much, was never refflavd by me, nor any in my name, and the contrare of what I now affirme shall never be proved. What is becomd then of all these monstrous sounes refflavd by me, or those under me, which have made so great a noyse?

I shall now offer to your lordships consideration, what became of these fourteene thousand mearks, and how they were disposed of by me.

1°. First, at my returne from Galloway in the yeare 1665, I deliverd a paper to the then Lord Commiffioner, which he communicated to the tuo Lords Archbishops, wherin I shew them what great expence I had beene at in three years before, for many incident charges in the Kings service, as also for my tuo journeys to Galloway, 1663, and

1665. Upon which I was orderd to deliver all the bonds I had taken to Mr Alexander Keith ; and haveing reffaved no command to deliver up the money which was then in my hand, I did conceive, and doe so still, that upon the account of my formentiond charges, that money was allowd me ; and confirmed I was in that opinion, because since that time, it was never sought from me, the ssume not exceeding one hundreth and fiftie pounds sterline, for all these charges. A precedent of this was given by the Privie Councell in the yeare 1663, when they orderd one hundreth and tuentie pounds sterline to be given to E. Lintlithgow, for the expence of his journey to Kirkcubright.

2°. In these forementiond yeares of 1665 and 1666, some minifters, on the account of some extraordinarie charges which they were at for the same busienes wherin I was imployed, received from me fortie pounds sterline.

3°. Thogh Robert Glover, (who is so oft mentiond in the long Report, and the abbreviation therof,) was not guiltie of so many enormities as he is charged with, yet I may, of these fourteene thousand mearks, safelie charge fixe hundreth mearks, if not more, upon him.

4°. The severall officers of these parties under my command, at severall times, for their extraordinarie charges, (such things being ordinarlie practis'd in all warrs,) reffaved from me one hundreth and ten pounds sterline, and upwards.

5°. Lastlie, when I was surpris'd at Drumfreis, the rebells tooke from me, of readie money in the chamber where I lay, and the chamber above it where my clothes were, (which were all likewise lost,) about fixe thousand and fixe or seven hundreth mearks Scots.

My lords, you see that in this account, I have not at all mentiond

my particular losses, either of horses, armes, furniture, cloaths, linnens, or my servants goods, all which for one of my meane qualitie, were not inconsiderable ; bot refers the consideration of all these losses, and all the premisses, to your lordships pleasure and determination.

End of my Accounts.

These accounts being red before the Councell, a great Committee is appointed to cognosce of them, to examine myselfe in any difficultie might arise, and report their sence to the Councell against the sixth of May. The Committee consisted almost of these members which composed the former one, except that (if I remember right,) E. Linlithgow, and my Lord Renton were added. The first professing kindness to me, and the second being my reall friend, made me flatter myselfe with a fancy, that much severity was not intended against me ; neither did my hopes abuse me ; for, being called to the Committee a day or two before the Councell met, I was used with all imaginable civillie. E. Tueeddaill being againe President, desired me to name the ministers to whom I had given the money mentioned in my accounts, which I did very readilie. Then I was desired to name the officers who had got a share of that money, for which I was accountable. I prepared to doe it instantlie, and had named one of the officers to the cleark ; bot E. Tueeddaill perceaveing I was unwilling to particularise the persons, after he had spoke with two or three of the Committee with a low voyce, told me, the Committee haveing found so much ingenuitie in me formerly, that they would take my word for this, and dispence with me in that particular ; and so dismissed me. The Report to the Councell was

favorable, and no doubt I had strong obligations both to E. Tueeddaill, and Sir Robert Murrey, for their kindnes in the Report ; for thogh my accounts were true and juft enough, yet if thefe two perfons and the reft of the Committee had not beene favorable to me, what I gave either to minifters or officers, or the hundreth and fiftie pound fterline I had taken to myfelfe without precept, had not beene allowed me. On the fixth day of May, the Committee made their report to the Councell, and both my charge and difcharge were allowed by their lordfhips, without a contrare vote, except my Lord Cochran, whom the King hath fince made Earle of Dundonnald. Ane act of councell was paff for my exoneration, a copie wherof followes.

Act of Councell for my exoneration, at Edenburgh the  
6th of May, 1668.

“ Forasmuch as the Kings Majesty haveing by his letter directed to the Lords of his Councill upon the third of March laft, ordered them to call Sir James Turner to ane account for moneys and bonds levied and taken by him for church fines, and in order thereto, they haveing appointed a committee of their oun number to confider of the faid Sir James his accounts, who, in obedience to the faid order, haveing called and conveyened the faid Sir James before them, and he haveing exhibit and given in a paper, bearing a charge and difcharge of the bonds and moneyes reffaved and levied be him ; and the faid Committee haveing diligentlie perufed and confidered the faid paper of accounts, did make the report folloueing : Firft, as to the charge, that their humble opinion was, that feeing they conceived there wold be

difficultie to prove legallie the charge of threttie eight thousand pounds Scots or therby, given in against him by the countrey, that the charge of threttie thousand pounds Scots confessed be him, (wherin they thinke him very ingenuous,) be admitted without further inquirie. And as to the first article of the discharge, craveing the allowance of one thousand pound sterline taken for quartering, that their opinion was that the same should be allowed, seeing it hath been the former custome to grant allowance of quartering upon such occasions. As to the second article, anent the bonds taken be him, and deliverd to Mr Alexander Keith, which amount to eight thousand one hundreth and fiftie one pound Scots, that Sir James should be exonerd of the same. As to the article of one hundreth and fiftie pound sterline, which he desires may be allowed upon the account of his charges for the severall times he went to Gallo-way; they thinke the same should be allowed to him upon that reason, and upon the consideration of the losses he sustained, by plundering of his horses, cloaths, etc. when he was taken prisoner. As to that article of fortie pound sterline given to some ministers, Sir James haveing made a particular condescendence who did reslave the famine; they thinke the same ought to be allowed to him. That the article of fixe hundreth mearks reslaved be Robert Glover be allowed, and some course be taken with him therefore. That the hundreth and ten pounds sterline given by him to officers under his command, for their extraordinarie charges be also allowed. And as to the last article of fixe thousand fixe hundreth mearks, which Sir James alledged he lost when he was taken prisoner; the Committee noways doubting Sir James his ingenuitie, offerd it as their opinion, that the same should be allowed him. The Lords of his Majesties Privie Counsell haveing at length

heard and considered the forsaide account of charge and discharge given in by the said Sir James Turner, together with the said Report of the Committee thereupon, doe approve of the said Report, and exoners and discharges the said Sir James of his intromission with the founes and bonds above specified, conforme to the tenor of the forsaide Report.

Extractum per me,

Sic subscribitur,

Pet. Wedderburne.

So ended the Act of Councell.

Haveing now at length comd to ane end of this tedious and troublesome busienes, wherin, in steade of some gratuitie from his Majestie, of which I was made to have great hopes, my livelihood was taken from me, not without some reflection on my reputation; and trulie things being represented so of me to the King, his Majestie might have usd me worse, better he could not; being, I say, at ane end of it, I tooke my leave of the Lords, thankfullie acknowledging the favours I received from some of them; and returning to Glasgow, I found my wife very sicke of a feaver, and in a strong apprehension of death; bot it pleased God she recoverd, to be a comfort to me after these sad tryalls.

Since then I have livd private, and though I profess myselfe no stoicke, nor have I indeed that apathie or insensibilitie of the stroakes of fortune and afflictions wherof they foolishlie boast, yet I may without vanitie say, that the Kings displeasure with me being set aside, I have beene bot litle movd with these changes of fortune that hath befallen me; nor have they brangled my resolutions from looking on

prosperitie and adverfitie with ane equall eye, nor fhall hinder me, fo farre as God fhall enable me with grace, to keepe a good confcience before God, ane unspotted loyaltie to my Prince, and faire and honneft dealeing with all men, at leaft in as hie a degree as man in the ftate of imperfection can reach to.

I am writeing this in the month of Februaire, of the yeare of our Lord one thoufand fixe hundreth three fcore and ten, and entring in the fixe and fiftieth yeare of my oune age, being in indifferent good health ; my bodie, confidering the fatigue of my life, not very craffie ; the intellectualls which God hath beftowed upon me, found enough ; and my memorie fo good, that though I never ufed to keepe notes in writeing, and that I have written within thefe four laft monthes, the Introduction to my Difcourfes, and the Introduction to this long Narration with the Narration itfelfe, in which are comprehended the moft remarkable paffages of my life ; yet all and everie one of them represented themfelvs as frefhlie to my remembrance as if they had beene bot the occurrences of yesterday. To God onlie wife, be glorie for ever. Amen.

END OF THE WHOLE NARRATION.

---

## **APPENDIX.**

---



## APPENDIX, No. I.

---

### BISHOP GUTHRY'S OBSERVATIONS OF THE LATE REBELLION OBSERVED.

---

AFTER haveing long fought for a manuscript of our late troubles, I have got a fight of it, and it beares this title : " Observations upon the  
" rise and progresse of the late rebellion against King Charles the First,  
" in so farre as it was carried on by a malecontented faction in Scot-  
" land, under pretext of reformation ; by Mr Henry Guttrie, Bishop of  
" Dunkeld." I have observd, in these Observations, some passages maliciouslie and fallie written against James Duke of Hamilton, and others which I know to be meere lyes ; bot these last, not directlie relateing to the Duke, I shall onlie touch *en passant*, that the reader may know the Bishop to have beene a man not to be trusted in what he writes, bot when the truth was knoune by more faithfull authors.

Page 17, [Pr. Mem. p. 40.] The Bishop, speakeing of Duke James, then Lord Commiffioner, writes :

" Upon the morrow, these lords and minifters returnd to his Grace,"

(now these lords and minifters were Covenanters,) “ and found him  
 “ more plaufible in treateing with them, even publickly before Rox-  
 “ burgh, Southefke, the Treafurer Depute, the Juftice Clerk and other  
 “ Councillors that were prefent. Bot that which was moft talkd of,  
 “ was that which at parting he told them in private ; for haveing de-  
 “ fired thefe Lords of the Councell to ftay ftill in the chamber till his  
 “ returne, himfelfe convoyed them” (to wit, the Covenanters) “ thorough  
 “ the roomes, and stepping into a gallerie, he drew them in to a corner,  
 “ and there exprefd himfelfe as follows : My lords and gentlemen, I  
 “ fpoke to you before thefe Lords of the Councell as the Kings Com-  
 “ miffioner ; now there being none prefent bot yourfelves, I wold fpeake  
 “ one thing to you as a kindlie Scottifman : if you goe on with courage  
 “ and refolution, you will carry what you pleafe ; bot if you faint and  
 “ give ground in the leaft, you are undone ; a words enough to wife  
 “ men.” The Bifhop proceeds thus : “ This haveing beene fpoke in pri-  
 “ vate, I fould not have mentiond it, if it had not comd to be publick ;  
 “ and reports anent it were fo different, that fome made it better, others  
 “ worfe then it was. Bot that fame very day, Mr Andro Cant told it  
 “ to Mr Guild, as alfo to Mafter Dagleis minifter of Cooper, to Mr  
 “ Robert Knox minifter of Kelfo, and to Mr Henry Guttrie minifter  
 “ of Stirlie.”

Anfuere.

The Bifhop, after fo foule an afperffion, fould have endeavord to  
 prove his accufation by fome more habile witneffes then Mr Andro  
 Cant, yea or any of the Covenanters, not excepting the beft of them ;  
 for all of them were then partie, all of them knew bot too well that  
 many publick affaires are carryed on by lyes, and the bufines ordinarlie

done before the people be undeceived ; and therfor I doubt not bot they wold studie by all meanes, lauffull and unlauffull, to carry thorough their begun rebellion ; and what more plaufible way to encourage their oune partie, and get profelites to their caufe, then to perfuade not onlie the populace, bot even men of note, parts and understanding, that his Majesties Commiffioner was only for the King in an outward and diffembled fhew, bot in his heart was entirelie for the Covenanters and their caufe ? Bot the Bifhop himfelfe makes Mr Andro Cant the reporter of this tale, and confequentlie father of the ly ; and indeed he could not have told it to three fitter trumpeters, wherof this Bifhop was himfelfe one. Bot let this manufcript be examin'd, it will be found the Bifhop accuses the fame Mr Cant, in another cafe, to have made a concatenation of lyes in the pulpit to his audience in a fermon, and blasphemous lyes in his prayer to God Allmightie. With what malice and impudence then can the Bifhop make ufe of the fame Mr Cant as a habile witnes againft James, then Marques, fince Duke of Hamilton ?

This Mr Guild, (if it be he I meane,) was an honneft man at that time, and a royalift ; and therfor Cant hath purpofelie told this ly to him, that Guild being once perfuaded to beleeve it, might alfo labour to bring other honneft and loyall men to a diftruff of the Commiffioner, that they might provide for their oune fafetie, by leaveing him and joyning with the Covenanters ; Cant and all his crue knowing well enough, that when one is boldlie calumniated, fomthing will fticke and adhere ; and affuredlie their defigne at that time and long afterwards, was, to make honneft men jealous one of another, and particularlie of James then Marques of Hamilton ; wherin they were bot too fuccefffull,

none contributeing more to it then the Bishop, the author of this manuscript.

Bot let us observe, what a poore and fillie kind of a man the Bishop makes the Marques to have beene. He convoyd the Covenanters out of the chamber where he was. Trulie I have knoune him keepe greater state when he was not the Kings Commiffioner. Bot he leaves the Privie Councillors, and convoys the Covenanters thorough severall roomes, and leads them to a corner in a gallerie, there to bluster out both treason and follie. James Duke of Hamilton had many and pouerfull enemies, who accusd him of treacherie; bot this Bishop is the first, (for any thing I ever yet heard,) that accusd him of follie. Wold any bot a foole, or a mad man, have told out his treacherous thoughts to a number of men, of whom he neither had, or fought a promise of silence. Could he not have imparted these villanies onlie to one of the Covenanters, (suppose my Lord Lindsay, the Dukes brother in law,) that he might tell them to the rest of the conspirators? Bot the Bishop will have the Duke to tell his treasonable cogitations to more then halfe a dozen of the violentest of all the Covenanters. The Dukes enemies never accusd him of follie, bot in the contrare of too much wit and policie; nor did they ever accuse him to be open mouthd, bot, in the contrare, to be the most close and reserved person that ever followed a court. Bot this Bishops malice is so great, that he will have the Duke to have beene both a knave and a foole, none of which he was ever able to prove.

Bot how wickedlie and fallie the Bishop hath represented this storie, may appeare perfectlie by this, that he writes of the famous then Earle, since Marques of Montrose, as one who beleevd this ridi-

---

culous narration to be true. There is no doubt bot that noble person was so wrought on to be Duke James his enemy, and was indeed so to a hie degree; and if he could have put any streffe on this forgerie, it is to be thought assuredlie he wold not have omitted it, but wold certainlie have made it one of the chiefe articles of that accusation he and others gave against Duke James, in the yeare 1643, in Oxford; and being he did it not, assuredlie he lookd upon it as a fable invented by Maister Cant, with some additional notes by Bishop Guttrie. You may reade these articles at Oxford, and Duke James his answers to them, in the Memoires of that Duke, and his brother Duke William, written by Doctor Burnet.

The Bishop, page 23. [Pr. Mem. p. 56.]

“ Notwithstanding my Lord Aboine desired my Lord Marques of Hamilton to joyne the land forces he had on the Kings ships with his, yet he did it not, bot lay still in the Firth, and did nothing at all.”

Anfuere.

The Marques might not, by his instructions, put all his land forces to the north. Aboyne got more then what he desired; for beside officers and amunition, the Marques gave him money, and the two first were onlie fought; bot what use Aboine made of all, I had rather the Bishop should learne from others then me. Reade the Memoires.

The Bishop, in that same page.

“ The Lord Marques came out of his ships, by boate, to the linkes of Barnbougall at midnight, where my Lord Loudon met him and had two hours conference with him; after which he returned to his ships, and the Lord Loudon to these who sent him.”

## Anfuere.

These who gave in a charge against Duke James at Oxford, 1643, were not so punctual, and therfor more prudent then the Bishop, who particularises a meeting in Barnbougall linkes with the Lord Loudoun, and flints the conference to tuo houres time; wheras the charge names not the Lord Loudoun at all, nor speakes not of one night, or tuo houres, bot says indefinitlie, the Marques keepd severall meetings in Barnbougall sands and places nixt adjacent, with some who were most desperate leaders and promoters of the Covenant; for fraud and deceit lurkes in generalls. Bot since the Bishop is so particular, I thinke he was bound to have made good his assertion. If he could not produce habile witneses, yet he was obliged to have namd some spectators, or bystanders. Assuredlie neither the Marques nor the Lord Loudoun came alone; and if the Bishop thought the Marques his attendants guiltie of their lords treacherie, and therfor not apt to reveale his secrets, yet he might have namd these who waited on Loudoun, who were no hoter Covenanters then the Bishop himselfe was at that time. And if my Lord Loudoun did tell the Bishop that he had met that night with the Marques of Hamilton, what will follow on that, bot that it was neither the first ly nor the last ly that lord had made, for promoting the holy covenant, and calumniating the Kings friends and servants, particularlie the Marques; to make loyall persons jealous of him, as one who keepd night meetings with his masters enemies, and therfor not to be trusted, and consequentlie to fall off to the Covenanters. Duke James fullie anfuere that charge at Oxford, as you may read in his Memoires.

The Bishop, page 46. [Pr. Mem. p. 117.]

“ The Marques being come home, (viz. anno, 1642,) he and Argile  
“ feasted daylie together, and spoke of a match betweene my Lord  
“ Lorne and Lady Anne Hamilton ; so that in steade of reclaiming Ar-  
“ gile to the Kings side, Marques Hamilton went along in Argiles way.”

Anfuere.

Marques James neither came doune from Court, or was sent doune by the King, to declare warre against Argile, or any of the Covenanters, bot to straine all the finues of his wit to gaine all of them to his Majesties service, and especiallie to hinder them to joyne either forces or councells with the blacke Parliament of England, then in armes against the King. Could Marques James deale in this great affaire with Argile, (the then prime Covenanter,) and not speake with him ; and could he speake with Argile, and not seeme to use him kindlie ? How hath malice foold this Bishop, as not to make use of that reason God had bestowed on him ! Did not the Bishop know that marriages are oftner spoke of among great men then intended ; yea, often consummated, yet both the married couple and their parents sticking close and adhering to their former principles, both in matters of faith and state ? Reade the true storie of the tuo brothers deportment in the yeare 1642, in their Memoires written by Dr Burnet, which will cleare any unbyassed reader.

The Bishop, speakeing of Lieutenant Generall Leslies march to

Kintire, writes, page 92. [Pr. Mem. p. 243.]

“ From Inneraray on the 24th of August [May] they marchd to Kintire, “ where Alafter Macdonald was, whose strength was 1400 foot, and  
“ tuo troopes of horse. On the 25th Macdonald skirmishd with them

" from morning till night ; bot the nixt day, himfelfe and his Irifhes,  
 " (haveing boates in readienes) fled to the Iles, and from thence to Ire-  
 " land. The countrey people, whom Macdonnald had conftained to joyne  
 " with him, fubmitted, on quarters given them by David Leffie ; bot  
 " haveing renderd their armes, Marques Argile and a bloodie preacher,  
 " Mr John Nevoy, prevaild with him to breake to them ; and fo the  
 " armie was let loofe upon them, and killd them all without mercie.  
 " Wheranent it feemd David Leffie had fome inward checke, for whill  
 " the Marques and he and that Mr Nevoy were walking together  
 " over the ancles in blood, he turnd about and faid, Now Mr Johne, have  
 " you not once got your fill of blood !"

Anfuere.

I have not taken notice of feverall falshoods, wherby the Bifhop  
 blemifhes and ftaines the actions of the noble Marques of Montroffe,  
 even when he intends to cry them up. I might have let this paffe  
 alfo, as being eccentric to my obfervations, which I intended onlie  
 concerning James Duke of Hamilton ; yet, to fhew how the Bifhop  
 impofes lyes and contrivd fables on his readers, and does not at all  
 make truth the fquare of his writeings, I fhall fpeake a litle to this  
 laft paragraph, as knouing the ftorie as well as any man breathing.  
 Firft, Macdonnald had good enough intelligence of Leffies march into  
 Kintire ; and therfor, if he had beene a foldier, and not exceffivelie  
 befotted with brandie and aquavitæ, he fould have poffeld the paffes  
 on this fide of Kintire, where one hundred well armd and refolute foot  
 might have done David Leffie mifchiefe enough, and gone faire to  
 have repelld his forces, efpeciallie his horfe. Nixt, that Macdonnald  
 skirmifhd from morning till night is fo falfe, that I beleeeve that ro-

inance had its existence onlie in the Bishops oune braine, and no where els. After Leslie had gaine the passes without reluctancie, very unadvisedlie rode with the horse severall miles before his foot, and there found Alaster on his march, bot out of time, (like mustard after dinner,) to the passes, particularlie to a house called Tarbot. Leslie made a halt, and offerd skirmish; tuo of Macdonnalds men were taken, and immediatlie without more adoe he retir'd; and now it was farre afternoone, Leslie thinking Alaster had retir'd to some strength, return'd backe to his foot. Was this to skirmish a whole day, where Leslie had neither man nor horse killd, shot or wounded? Nixt day, Leslie pursued, bot found Macdonnald was fled to Ila, bot had left 300 men, and stout men they were, at Dunnevertie; which he did like a foole, neither that house nor Dunneveg in Ila haveing any water, which occasioned the losse of both places. A fearfull ly it was in the Bishop, to write that these Alaster had left behind him had quarter promis'd, and given them by David Leslie. A most false calummie. The truth was this. The 300 men in Dunnevertie had faire conditions offerd them for their persons and baggage, if they wold give over the house; this they stiffly refus'd to doe, expecting releefe which Alaster had falslie promis'd. At length their lower trench being storm'd and taken, and fortie of their men killd in it, want of water made them beg conditions which before they had refused; bot none were granted them, bot to come out on discretion, which they did, and so were put to the sword. Heere nothing was done against the laws and custome of warre, much lesse against faith or parole; for neither life nor quarter was ever promis'd them. Yet I shall not deny bot heere was crueltie enough; for to kill men in cold blood, when they have submitted to mercie, hath

no generositie at all in it. It is true, David Leslie hath confest it afterwards to severalls, and to myselve in particular oftner then once, that he had spard them all, if that Nevoy, put on by Argile, had not, both by preachings and imprecations insteade of prayers, led him to commit that butcherie. However, he broke neither word nor articles, as this Bishop falslie alleages. And is it not a prettie storie of the Bishop to say, that the Marques of Argile, David Leslie, and Nevoy waded over the ancles in blood? Certainlie they have beene horriblelie delighted in blood, that wold walke in blood, where they might have walkd dryshod. Could the blood of 300 men, in a hote summer day, make such a poole of blood as to come over mens ancles? Bot this is so farre from truth, that David Leslie never saw these 300 men either dead or alive, or ever came neere them, say the Bishop what he will.

I cannot deny, bot there was some inhumanitie used in this action; bot if we will confider what a graceles and disobedient crue of desperados these were who sufferd, we must acknowledge they got no more bot what they justlie deservd. For, first, no request, no intreatie nor command of Marques Montrosse, could prevaile with Alaster, or with his Irish and Kintire men, to stay with him after Kilfith battell; bot to Kintire they wold goe, and to Kintire they did goe, and to that disobedience of theirs, and my Lord Aboyns leaveing him with his northerne horse, might Montrosse impute his losse at Philiphauch. Nixt yeare after that, the late King sent his commands to Montrosse to lay doune armes, which he did; the like orders did his Majestie send to Alaster and his Kintire men, by Sir James Leslie, which that mad man and his cracke braind companie obstinatlie and rebelliouslie refusd to obey. Befide, they had shed much innocent blood, which might well

---

have beene spared ; for tho Argile and many others were guiltie of capitall crimes, yet most of their vaffalls and tennants were innocent ; and of them it might be said, what have these poore sheepe done ? Now, these unhappie men who would neither obey their oune Generall, nor their Soveraigne Prince, for whom they pretended to fight, bot wold needs stand on their oune legs, and who disdaine fullie refusd faire conditions when they were reduced to extremities, what quarters could they rationallie expect from their profesd and dounright enemies, the Covenanters ? Yet, perhaps, their welldeserved punishment was inflicted on them by the wrong hand.

The Bishop, speakeing of Duke James his election to be Generall,  
1648, page 100. [Pr. Mem. p. 267.]

“ There came onlie tuo to be talkd of, in reference to the hieft place  
“ of command. The one was Duke Hamilton, whose friends contend-  
“ ed, it sould be setled on him. The other was the Earle of Calander,  
“ very many being for it, that he sould be the man, etc.”

Ansuere.

I beleeve, when the Bishop wrote this, he knew he was writeing a ly ; for he could not bot know, that the Duke and his friends were so farre from contending for that hie charge, that it was imposd on him against his will, by parliament ; and if he had not accepted, he had beene sent to the Castle of Edenburgh, if he had not met with harder measure ; nor did ever the Earle of Calander, or any for him, desire a hier charge then to be Lieutenant Generall under the Duke. See the Dukes Memoires.

The Bishop, speaking of the fight at Machlin, page 104.

[Pr. Mem. p. 278.]

“ The fight lasted not long, Middleton in an instant putting them  
“ all to flight ; eightie of them being kild in the place, the rest taken  
“ prisoners, except a few that escaped by flight.”

Anfuere.

As short as this relation is, it has many grosse lyes in the bellie of it. Middleton did not rout these rebels in an instant ; they disputed the matter long, wounded both him and Colonell Hurrie with suords on the head, which shew they did not presentlie fly ; and if E. Calander had not comd up with 8 troopes of horse, Colonell Turners regiment of foot following fast, the busines had beene worfe with Middleton. There were not ten of them kild, and not above fixtie prisoners. Now when the fight began, they were no fewer than tuo thousand ; how could then the Bishop impudentlie say, that all were kild and taken except a few that escaped by flight ; for most of all, on Calanders appeareing, got away in a full bodie ?

The Bishop, page 105. [Pr. Mem. p. 279.]

“ Generall Major George Monro had arrivd by this time from Ire-  
“ land, with tuo thousand foot, and one thousand horse, and marchd  
“ straight after the armie to England.”

Anfuere.

In the unhappie tranfactions and Engagment in the yeare 1648, all along the Bishop makes the Duke to drive on hidden designes ; and when the too earlie riseings in England, and Sir Marmaduke Langdales too suddenn levies, forced the Duke allmost unprepared to march,

the Bifhop maliciouſlie conceales the true reaſons of the Dukes march, as alſo how he was forced to march with halfe regiments, ill armd and worſe diſciplind, in the rainieſt ſummer ever Europe ſaw ; and withall, to make the Duke more odious, he multiplies his forces, as heere he doth Sir George Monros ; for he landed not in Scotland with above fifteene hundreth foot, and four hundreth horſe.

The Biſhop, page 106. [Pr. Mem. p. 283.]

“ The Scots armie made Preſton their hoff quarter, bot withall quarterd ſo wide, that betueene the van and reare of their armie, there “ was neare eight and threttie miles, and withall ſufferd not George “ Monro and his forces to come up, bot keepd him allwife behind, to “ bring up the foots canon, which were in number five.”

Anfuere.

Malicious Biſhop ! who, before the armie was raid, makes the Duke underhand play the ſame game which Argile and the kirk was playing above board ; and after he was Generall, the Biſhop makes him act like a man who deſigned to get his armie deſtroyd, his maſter ruind, and himſelfe murderd. Biſhop, I wold not have beleevd one word of this laſt paragraph, tho I had heard you preach it in a pulpit. Preſton was never the hoff quarter, nor did ever any of Duke James his armie quarter in it. The Duke wold gladlie have had Sir George Monro and his forces come up to his armie, becauſe his men were traind and experiencd ; bot in this, as ſeverall other things, he unhappilie ſufferd himſelfe to be overruled, nor did Sir George deſire to joyne. The Dukes Memoires will informe you. It was agreed on, that Sir George ſould ſtill be in the reare, not for bringing canon, for we

never saw any, but for bringing ficke and straglers. It was also agreed on that Sir Marmaduke Langdale should constantly have the van, for providing guides, but mostly for intelligence, the want whereof hastend our ruine; for Sir Marmaduke and some of the Dukes armie were routed, before we knew it was Cromwell that had done the feate. The day before Cromwell appeared, Calander and Middleton had perswaded the Duke to suffer them to goe with most of the cavallerie, eight miles from the head quarters to Wiggam; but notwithstanding that unhappie march, there was not fixteene miles from the van to the reare of all our forces, which this Bishop with his multiplying glasse makes up to eight and threttie.

The Bishop, in that same page. [Pr. Mem. p. 284.]

“ Sir Marmaduke Langdale, in his skirmish, sent to the Duke and  
 “ Earle Calander for amunition, which was refused him. The next  
 “ day, Generall Major Baillie rendered himselfe and ten thousand foot  
 “ prisoners; the rest of them stragled northwards towards Monro. The  
 “ Duke and Calander, and the rest of the generall officers, (except  
 “ Middleton, who made the best appearance of any, and was taken on  
 “ the place,) with three thousand horse, fled together in a body. Short-  
 “ lie after, the Duke, with all the other generall persons, and all the  
 “ bodie of horse, were taken prisoners, except Earle Calander, who in  
 “ a disguise escaped to Holland.”

Anfuere.

In a few lines the Bishop hath couched a good many malicious lyes. First, Sir Marmaduke got more amunition then could at that time be well spared, and more then he desired; and numbers of men were like-

wife sent to him ; and, by his misintelligence, takeing Cromwell to be one Ashton, a presbyterian gentleman in Lancashire, he was instrumentall in his oune and the Dukes ruine. Nixt, Lieutenant Generall Baillie had not fiftene hundreth foot with him, when, at Warinton bridge, finding they could make no resistance, [he] renderd himselfe and them prisoners of warre. Thirdlie, Middleton made no greater appearance then the Duke himselfe did, nor was Middleton taken on the place ; but tuo days after our first rencounter, he was taken in Staffordshire by tuo countrey troopes, his horse stumbling under him. Fourthlie, after our march from Ribble bridge, the Duke never saw eight hundreth of his horse in a bodie, which the Bishop, according to his custome, makes three thousand. And here the Bishop, with his accustomed malice, conceales that Calander left the Duke at Utuxeter, and tooke the halfe of the horse with him, leaving the rest so disheartend and discouragd, that they even put a necessitie on the Duke to treat for himselfe and them. And heere the Bishop, out of spite to the Duke, conceales this treatie, and therby seemes to justifie the blacke Parliaments murther of the Duke, being he mentions no previous treatie, wherein the Duke and all with him got faire quarters, and articles fignd. Is not all this done like a reverend and devout father of the church ?

The Bishop, page 108. [Pr. Mem. p. 288.]

“ Sir George Monro comeing neare the border of Scotland, acknowledged Lainrick for his Generall. Thither came also Sir Thomas Tillie with a thousand English horse, and offerd his service ; but was refusd by Lainrick, saying, it wold be a meane to draw Cromwell into Scotland.”

## Anfuere.

The Bifhop hath purfued Duke James till he left him imprifond with the bloodie fectaries, where he needed expect no good ufage ; and then the Bifhop returns to Scotland, to perfecute his brother Lainrick. Could any man have imagind, a Bifhop could have fhaken a thoufand Englifh horfe fo foone out of his fleeve ; I never heard of thefe thoufand horfe before, and I beleeeve never fhall heerafter. I knew Sir Thomas Tillie very well ; a Roman Catholic he was, bot a very loyall perfon. I doe not remember ever I faw him with Duke James. I have heard he was to be Major Generall of Sir Marmaduke Langdales foot ; and fo had no horfe with him, bot thefe belongd to his oune perfon and his fervants. Very wellcome he wold have beene with a thoufand horfe before our defeate, bot how he got a thoufand horfe together fo foone after we were beaten, and marchd fo speedilie with them to the Scots border, is beyond all wonder ; onlie I fancy the Bifhop levied and tranfported them there, purpofelie that Earle Lainrick fould refufe their helpe, and fo fould pertake of his brother Duke James his treacherie.

What the Bifhop writes of his generall affemblies, and their commitees and commiffions, may perhaps be true ; for he was for moft part a conftant member of them. Bot affuredlie when he wrote this paper, he might have fpent his time better to have written a homelie. And now, good Bifhop, I am fo perfectlie wearie of this moft malicious and lying pamphlet of yours, that I am readie to fueare never to reade any of your fermons after it.

## APPENDIX, No. II.

---

### LETTERS TO SIR JAMES TURNER.

---

#### 1. FROM WILLIAM DUKE OF HAMILTON.

Hamilton, 22 No<sup>r</sup>, 1672.

SIR,

I KNOW so well by experience what a trouble the pain of the sciatick is, that I am very forry you should have it, and that it has at this time hindered me of your company ; but if your health or buffines can allow you to come here againe Chriffenmas, againe which time I intend to return from Ed<sup>r</sup>, yow shall be most heartely welcome ; and if you will be pleased to send me a copie of these memoires yow have of the buffines, I shall take it for a very great [favour] ; and the peruseing of it before I see you, will enable me the more at meeting to talk with yow of that affair, and to let you know my designe in it ; knoueing how much both my famely and my self is oblidge to your good opinion of us ; which, when it is in my power other wayes to expresse my sense of, you shall find me very really, Sir, your most affect<sup>d</sup> friend and servant,

HAMILTON.

For Sir James Turner.

## 2. FROM DR GILBERT BURNET.

Glas: 1 May [1673?] 10 a'clocke.

HONO<sup>LL</sup> SIR,

THE enclosed you sent me for her [Grace] is, as every thing I ever saw [from your] pen, truly worthy of you. [Give me] leave to adde, that it was an overstretch of modesty that you referre the reading it, and judging how fitt it were to be sent to me, who will never presume to judge of any thing comes from you, being assured before hand that it must be excellent good. I shall seal and send your letter quickly, for a bearer is now in town. I encline to follow your advice in the particular you mention, and cannot easily expresse how strong my Inclinations are on all occasion to approve my selfe, Hono<sup>LL</sup> Sir, your most obliged and faithfull servant,

GILBERT BURNETT.

I send you a book I lately had, supposed to be the D. of Buckingham; but I have [reason] to apprehend it Cap. Titus his work. One sheet hath been left out in the binding of it.

For the Hono<sup>LL</sup> Sir James Turner, at Gorbells.

## 3. FROM DR BURNETT.

Hamilton, 18 Aug. [1673.]

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL,

MY disappointment of many papers I was put in hope of, hath kept me all this while from performing the journey I designed when I

waited on you. I am now neerer a readines then formerly ; but, because the enclosed paper differs in some things from the accounts I had from you, I send it to you, to see if it can so refresh your memory, that all may be fully adjousted. This paper is of Liv' Gen. Drumonds penning, as it is like you will know by the hand. The most considerable variation from your account is, that here you will find advertisements sent by Monro to the Generall of Cromwells forces at Skipton. He said, they knew not if these they sent came to the army, for they never returned to them ; but he is sure they sent many another thing. He tells of eight regiments of horse they found lying behind your army. It is true, he added, they were but of but 150 horse or 200 at most a peece.

I hope when you have perused this paper you will return it with such reflections as shall occurre, particularlie for clearing those things I have touched. I know your generous friendship for the memory of him you honour so much, will make you easy to me for putting you to so much trouble ; therefore, without any further apology, I break off, tho I shall never break off from being, Noble Sir, your most humble and most faithfull servant,

GILBERT BURNETT.

For the Right Worshipfull Sir James Turner, at Glasgow.

#### 4. FROM R. HAMILTON OF DICKMONT.

Kenill, the [1673.]

HONORED S<sup>a</sup>,

I DID not meit w<sup>t</sup> my lord duck till he com east. I shew him your letter ; he sayes qu he comes west, which wilbe at furthest the nixt

week, he ſd he reſolued to haue yow at hamilton; he ſays y<sup>t</sup> S<sup>r</sup> will. lockart was ſpok to qn he was heir, bot his tym in this cuntrie was ſhort; he ſd lykways y<sup>t</sup> he wold caus the profeſſor to wait on yow, in order to thoſe amendements, and to conffer w<sup>t</sup> yow wpon y<sup>t</sup> expedition.

I moſt intreat yow to giue my lord a uiſit at hamilton, for I affure yow both his gr. and the dutches uiſes yow weall, and as much your friend, and will tak your weiſſit w<sup>e</sup>ri kyndlie. I told the generall y<sup>t</sup> I had bein w<sup>t</sup> yow, and of your ciuilitie and kynd remembrance of all your old acquaintance, and particularlie to himſelf. Houſtounes his ſerwice remembrit to yow; he ſays he hes toylled himſelf much to find out your age, and hes read not a few books and ancient records; bot at laſt he hes fund it out, y<sup>t</sup> in quein marie of jngland her tym, ther was one Serjeant major turnor, a glant man, ſerwed hir in the warrs, which directlie he finds was yow by ſeverall obſeruations. S<sup>r</sup>, I wiſſe yow guid health; I pray yow remember my ſerwice to your ladie; I haue nothing elſe to troubell yow w<sup>t</sup>, bot y<sup>t</sup> I am, Honored S<sup>r</sup>, your moſt humbill ſerwant,

R. HAMILTON.

For his honord freind, Sir James Turner, at Glaſgow, Theſ.

##### 5. FROM DR BURNET.

Hamil. 22 Aug. 1673.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL,

I SHALL not enter on a particular confideration of your laſt, but ſhall only tell you, you give in it ſuch demonſtrations of your noble frienſhip for the two Dukes, that you have to a very high degree

obliged both Duke and Duchesse ; who comand me to return their very hearty thanks to you, and are resolved on every occasion to make appear what a sence they have of their obligations to you. I now send you all I have written, both of the Ingagment and the bufines of Strivelin, and will expect your opinion of it. Yesterday Dachmont was with me, and told me diverse particulars were new to me ; the most considerable of them you will find added by my hand, but one thing I demurre on till I hear your sence of it. He tells me, that being sent by S<sup>r</sup> George Monroe to the Duke, on the Fryday before Preston, the Duke read to Douchel and him a letter he had from Langdale, telling how the enemy had rendezvoused at Oatly and Oatley-park, wher Cromwell was. This seems to vary from your account ; so I hope, when you have read the papers my man will give you, that you will favour with a return, Sir, your most humble faithfull servant,

GIL. BURNETT.

For the Right Worshipfull Sir James Turner, at Glasgow.

#### 6. FROM THE DUKE OF HAMILTON.

28 August, 1673.

SIR,

ON monday Mr Burnet went from this on his way to London. If I do not follow him within a fortnight, I resolve to keep my resolution in seeing yow about the end of the hervest ; and if you have not advertisement before I come, I shall dispencc w<sup>t</sup> your fare, if I have the good fortune to find yourself. I shall communicate yours to Mr Burnet before that book come abroad, for I thinke what yow say is

very rationall. If I go to London, and can do yow any service there, yow may be assured of it from, Sir, your oblidge friend and servant,

HAMILTON.

For Sir James Turner, at Glasgow.

#### 7. FROM DR BURNET.

Hamilton, 22 Nov<sup>r</sup>, (1673.)

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL,

I AM sorry I came so soon out of Glasgow, since I thereby missed an occasion of answering yours, and brought on you the trouble of sending your servant so farre. The Duke of Hamilton goes in on Monday or Tuesday, and sent for me, but I shall wait on you, please God, on Tuesday or Wednesday, and then we shall talk more fully.

Mean while, I shall tell you, I had not advised you to so humble a Confession as you made the Com<sup>r</sup>; since your greatest crime was too implicit obedience to a Com<sup>r</sup>, which certainly, in his account, should passe for a very veniall fin. I wish you had pretended sooner to Vreys place, tho I think it is not too late till his successor be declared; but I apprehend D. Laud. is so engaged, not only to Borthick, but also to Mr Stewart, who was made liv<sup>t</sup> with a promise of the first captains place, tho Mr Drumond of Lundie was preferred, that I suppose D. Laud. will take an occasion at once to oblige Borthwick, and to perform his promise to Mr Stewart; yet your pretending will at least doe you this right, that whatever follow, you have again offered your service to the King. You can expect nothing from D. Ham. mediation

with D. Laud, they are in so ill termes. How the Chancellor stands with the Com<sup>r</sup> I know not, but your application to the Parliament would be well considered, for I know not how the lords of Councell will like the Precedent, since vpon the matter it will found a complaining of their vnjustice. But I wish you were at Ed<sup>r</sup>, if your health could allow of it, for ther' you could take better measures then any can at this distance. This is what occurs. I shall only adde, that at London D. Laud expressed to me a willingnes to promote your brother, which makes me think he hath no ill impreffion of you; but how farre E. Tweeddale would now choake or promote your bufines in Parl<sup>t</sup>, I cannot say. And now D. Ham. and he are closely vnited at this tyme. I am no more than I was, for I told the King plainly I would not be a Bishop, nor any great thing, but I am vnalterably, Sir, your most humble faithfull seruant,

GILBERT BURNET.

Ther came no newes to this place since Tuesday. The Duchesse here is your most faithfull friend, and remembers her to you very kindly.

For the Right Worshipfull

Sir James Turner, at the Gorbells.

#### 8. FROM THE DUKE OF HAMILTON.

S<sup>a</sup>,

I AM forie your Indisposition hindered me from your good company this day w<sup>t</sup> your ladys, who my wife was very glade to see; but your thoughts of looking after things beyond the sea troubles me extreamly, and I hope, even the time you propose before you do itt, some thing may fall out that may give you ground to change your resolution. I

I shall not in this trouble you w<sup>t</sup> my full thoughts of itt, hoping to see you before your resolutions be more determined ; onely I shall say, that your employing the cheife minister, in desiring so small a favor from his Ma<sup>ty</sup> to you as a pass, can certainly not be refused or mistaken by any. Your observes are most rationall ; but how to help what Mr Burnets precipitant hast to bring these memoires to the view of the world, is the great question ; for it is that has occasioned these great errors, and what ground he had to make so much hast, I could never understand, and I did what I could to prevent itt, that they might have been a litle better digested ; and on this very account he and I are fallen in those terms that wee do not correspond ; but at meeting wee shall talke of these matters at more length ; and not having any news worth your trouble, I onely add the assurance of my being, S<sup>r</sup>, your affect<sup>d</sup> friend and servant,

HAMILTON.

For Sir James Turner.

#### 9. FROM THE DUKE OF HAMILTON.

22 Sep. [1675.]

SIR,

THE uncertainty of my sons going, by the delay of the ships making ready, and the necessity that is on me to be present at the next Council day, makes me uncertain till my return here, where and when I shall meet w<sup>t</sup> L<sup>t</sup> Generall Drumond. So soon as I can be positive in it, I shall lett you know. The B<sup>p</sup> of Dumblane I expect to see here this day. I confes I . . . . . the primats change to him ; but a

little time will discover many things, and shall that I am, Sir, your  
most affect friend,

HAMILTON.

For Sir James Turner.

10. FROM THE DUKE OF HAMILTON.

Hamilton, Nou<sup>ber</sup> 13, 1675.

S<sup>r</sup>,

I RECEIVED yours of yesterday, and give you my hearty thanks for the kindness it expresses. My journey has been but resolu'd since I went last to Edin<sup>b</sup>; nor does it proceed from any call from the King, but the general desire, and frequent pressure, of all friends at Court; w<sup>ch</sup> having communicated to our well-wishers here, and finding their opinion to agree w<sup>t</sup> the others judgment, I thought my self obliged to consent to so unanimous a motion. In the mean time, if I may be stedable to you in any thing at Court, assure your self my endeavors to serve you shall be suitable to the many civilities you have evidenced to S<sup>r</sup>, your obliged friend and servant,

HAMILTON.

For Sir James Turner.

11. FROM THE DUKE OF HAMILTON.

Hamilton, 19 March, 77.

S<sup>r</sup>,

I PRAY you give your brother my thanks for letting me hear from him anent a minister to Borrowstones, and tell him his recommendation

will have great weight w<sup>t</sup> me, and I shall inform my self anent that man he recomends; that I did not present my self to some vacancies I have in this shire, but left it the Archbishope, was because I am apprehensive, by the unruliens off that people, that whatever conform minifter come amongst them, his incouragement will be but small; and I had no will to imploy any, wher they might have so litle satisfaction. Att this junctur, it will be an ill time to recomend that relation off yours to be a Captane, for upon the takeing of 500 men off the recruits off my brothers regiment att sea, the King of France has broke ten companies off the regiment. Nixt winter will be more fitt, for then is the time he makes up any vacancies, and then you shall have all the assistance I can give yow. I am sorie to hear yow haue been so ill off the Goutt. I intend to be shortly in Glasgou, at which time yow shall see your most affec<sup>t</sup> friend and servant,

HAMILTON.

For Sir James Turner.

## 12. FROM THE DUKE OF HAMILTON.

11 Aprill [1677.]

SIR,

THER is no haft in your speaking to the Arch-Bishope, and when yow gett his relation off that affair I spoke of to yow, then hear iff he inclines to do me right wherin his informations had injurred me; it was I that shuned liueing with him as formerly, which he wold willingly done, but till he do some what to right me wher he has done me wrong, I incline not to itt, and I fear so long as he has his de-

pendancie wher he has, ther is litle that way may be expected from him, or trusted to him, promis what he will ; but I know your discretion and friendship for me so much, that I leave itt to your management, and am very really, your affec<sup>t</sup> friend and servant,

HAMILTON.

13. FROM THE DUKE OF HAMILTON.

23 May, [1677.]

SIR,

AT my return from Anandale, I found yours of the 15 here ; my wife being to go to Glasgow this day will lett you know my thoughts as to the Chan. and the reason of the difference betuixt him and the Precedent, and what ar my conjectures of his sending up his son, and will impart to you all I know more, wherby you will find a litle time may produce severall revolutions. So honest men had need to be well and seriously advifed ; and putting great confidence in you, I shall not doubt of your friendship and frie advise, which shall meet with all the returns of kindnes in the pouer of your affec<sup>t</sup> friend and servant,

HAMILTON.

14. SIR JAMES TURNER'S " DISCOURSE WITH THE ARCHBISHOP  
OF GLASGOW, THE 28 OF MAY 1677."

THERE is one fraiser who is prifoner at Dumbarton, as being accessorie to a manslaughter committed by one of his sonnes ; I had tuo letters from him defireing me to advise w<sup>t</sup> our Archbishop what might

'be done for him, pretending innocence. . I knew the Archbishop had kindnes for the man as being his old acquaintance, and therfor I layd hold on this occassion to goe to the castle last monday, where I found Orbiston and a sonne of Barns adviseing with him concerning the tryall of some witches ; there I found also our provost, and his bayliffs, two wherof runne out so soone as they saw me ; there was also Sir John Monkreiff, a coufine of the Marquesse of Athole ; I stayd till most of these were dispatched, and then enterd in a discourse w<sup>t</sup> the Archbishop concerning Frazer ; from that I fell to speake of a wrong was done to a friend of mine, a minister, by the B. of the Isles (wherin I beleve he was assisted by both our Archbishops), and askd him if he had no vacant places in his oune Diocesse for that poore minister. He told me, he thoght for my sake he might accommode him in Anandaill ; bot that not being my errand, I askd him if there were no vacancies in Cliddaill ; he said, Differf was vacant, for one Hamilton, to whom it was offerd, wold not accept. I said, nor sould my friend come there w<sup>t</sup> my consent. He told me he had presented one Gallan to Lessimahego. I askd if all these were fallen *Jure devoluto* in his hand ; he said yes, bot he had not made use of his power till he wrote my lord duke, and got his anfuere, that he might present whom he pleasd. I told him he had done in that very modestlie ; and so haveing made a faire way to my intended discourse, I said, I wishd there had been no mistakes between the duke and him about other matters ; he anfuerd, he wishd the same. I prayd him to relate the matter to me, if he had the leisure : very willinglie, said he, and did it, to my best remembrance, in these or very neare the like tearms.

At London, said he, my lord duke was pleasd to give me a visite ;

where falling on the subject of indulgd ministers, he desired me to be favourable to them, as to men who contributed much to the peace of the country. I answered, that they might expect faire enough usage from me, provided they did these things they were obliged to doe. My lord D. asked me what these things were: one, said I, is the keeping the 29 of May; he said, he thought that should be done. Another thing, said I, must be done by them, or they can expect no favour from me, and that is, to ordaine no young men or Expectants, which they too often practise, and that will perpetuate the schisme. The duke, said he, replied, how can yow or any other get helped? This, said he, I thought was strange language; but answered, that their were hopes, if men did their dutie, it might be got helped by time. This vpon the matter, said he, was all passed betueene vs on that heade. Not long after, said he, I had occasion to goe to D. Lauderdale concerning my dispatch to Scotland, havinge allreadie kist the kings hand, without any resolution to tell him any thing had passed betueene D. Hamilton and me. There were some companie with him; but so soone as he saw me, he came with his accustomed addresse to me, and told me he had somthing to impart to me, and immediatlie tooke me to another roome, and told me there had beene a noble person with him, who had promised he should be a very great man, and the king a glorious prince, w<sup>t</sup> many other promises, if he wold procure the Indulgence in Scotland to be enlarged. I asked who that person was: he answered, my ladie Dutchesse of Hamilton; and that her G. had beene very earnest w<sup>t</sup> him in the busienes. This vnexpected rencounter, said the Archbishop, made me apprehend the Duke of Hamiltons designe reached further then at first I was aware of, and therevpon told D. Lauderdale

what had passd betueene D. Hamilton and me. D. Lauderdale bid me looke well to it, for the busines concernd me and all these of my order. I told him, said he, I could do no more in it then relate it to him, haveing taken my leave of the king. Yes, said D. Lauderdale, it will be fit you acquaint the English Bishops with the matter before you goe to Scotland. Nixt day, said he, D. Lauderdale and I dind w<sup>t</sup> the Archbishop of Canterburie at Lambeth, where were present the Bishops of London, Worcester and Rochester. After dinner, D. Lauderdale told the English Bishops, that he thought I had somthing to say to them; on which I related to them what I have told yow; and D. Lauderdale told them what had passd betueene the Dutchesse of Hamilton and him. The English Bishops were of opinion, D. Hamilton might readilie propound the matter to the king, and therfor it were fit to preuent him, bot told me, I might goe to Scotland; and so, said he, I went away. I was told therafter, said he, that the king spoke with D. Hamilton on the matter, and that the king told him, now I have it out of yo<sup>r</sup> oune mouth, that you are for enlarging the Indulgence, and for the presbiterians to give ordination. The Duke, said he, wrote a letter to me, to which I gave an ansuere, containing all I have now related to you; for I wrote to him I had said nothing of his G. to either D. Lauderdale or the English Bishops, bot what I wold give vnder my hand. And heere the Archbishop stopd.

I askd him, If D. Lauderdale had not told him what my ladie Dutchesse of Hamilton said to him, wold he have told D. Lauderdale what D. Hamilton said to him; he protested he wold not, and could take God to witnes in it. Then I told him, that I was informed, D. Hamilton, in his Discourse with the king, had neither desired of his

Majestie an enlargment of the Indulgence, or libertie of ordination. Bot the king asking him what his opinion of the Indulgence was, he hielie magnified that which was granted, as a thing that contributed much to the peace of the countrey where these Indulgd minifters preachd. And being askd by his Ma<sup>ty</sup>, if he thought any greater Indulgence fould be granted, answered, He wold not take on him to tell his mind extemporarie ; bot that if his Ma<sup>ty</sup> wold call for others and aske their advice, he fould be readie faithfullie to tell his opinion. To all this the Archbishop replyd, That he was informed, D. Hamilton denyd that he gave the king advice to permit ordination by presbiters, bot did not deny that he had adviced him for a larger Indulgence. I replyd, That I beleevd the Duke denyd both the one and the other, bot I wold not meddle in it. Then I told the Archbishop, that his revealing to D. Lauderdaill what had passd betueene D. Hamilton and him, provd no good office to the Duke, becaufe on occasion therof, men had endeavord to possesse the king with thoughts that the Duke intended an alteration in church government, which I beleevd never enterd into his thoughts. He answered, he was blameles of that ; he had represented no more bot what had reallie passd betueene them. I replyd, I was sorry it had fallen out so vnluckilie in his hand, for I had never heard D. Hamilton speake to the prejudice of either him or his order ; nay, I have heard him say, he wold never liue vnder that presbiterian government which was in his younger years exercisd in Scotland. The Archbishop subjoyned, that he had neuer entertaind any other bot honorable thoughts of my lord Duke ; and so after ordinarie complements, we parted.

## 15. FROM THE DUKE OF HAMILTON.

SIR,

1 Jun. [1677.]

I AM sorry you have taken so much pains to so little purpose, for I did apprehend it wold be as is fallen out. How ever, I thanke yow very heartely, and when it is in my pouer, your kindnes shall not be forgote. I discover more of the designe has been in that buffines now I knew befor, by the relation the Arch B. gives of itt; for my wife spoke what he says my Ld Lauderdale told him att parting many weeks befor, and what passed betuixt him and me was indeed but a few days befor he parted; and after what past betuixt my wife and my Ld Lauderdale, wee was in great civillities together, and many offers made, which was not accepted; wherupon it seams this ingine has been fallen on to incense the King, seeing him use me well; bot till I see yow I will not trouble yow w<sup>t</sup> a more full account of that affaire, and wherin the Arch B. relation differs w<sup>t</sup> me; and for that end I must desire the seeing you here when I return from Ed<sup>t</sup>, wher its like I may go from Kinneill the end of the nixt weeke. I had letters on Saturday that Duke Laud: wold be down this month and by sea; other occurrancis I have bid Smith give yow, but little matteriall yett: the Chancelors way is well enough understood by all fides, and time will clear his politiks. I am very really, Sir, your most affec<sup>t</sup> friend,

For Sir James Turner.

HAMILTON.

## 16. FROM THE DUKE OF HAMILTON.

16 Jun. [1677.]

I WISH yow had comed your self, for I confes I do not understand

your letter ; for how it can be expected I will appear in any publicke thing, confidering as I am stated, w<sup>t</sup>out being called to it by his Ma<sup>ty</sup>, who has thought it fitt for his service to lay me aside, is a thing sure in comon discretion I ought not to do as a private person. I hope to cary my self as becomes a good subject, and no body shall be more ready to pay Gen. Dalyell all civillity then your most affec<sup>t</sup> friend and servant,

HAMILTON.

For S<sup>r</sup> James Turner.

## 17. FROM THE DUKE OF HAMILTON.

S<sup>a</sup>,10 Sep<sup>r</sup> [1677.]

BEING just going to my horse for Kinneill, I have onely time to tell yow that I thinke yow may send your letter wherof I return yow the copy ; for I shall be very glade all honest men may come in imployment, and shall wish yow good successe in itt : onely I shall tell yow that the Lyons place was to his son as well as himself, so that does not vauke ; and I hear the L<sup>ts</sup> Colls: place is intended for this young E. of Kellie, and that of the Castle of Ed<sup>r</sup> to one Maitland, who is a Cap<sup>t</sup> in my brothers regiment, and was once D. L. padge, who is already sent for ; he onely to have the profite of the company, and the other renew of the Castle to go for D. L. owen use. I thinke yow had best examine these things, for I wold not have yow rash in exposing your desires. At my return, which will be the end of this weeke, I shall be glade to see yow, and then it is like yow may hear more from your most affec<sup>t</sup> friend,

HAMILTON.

For S<sup>r</sup> James Turner.

## 18. FROM THE DUKE OF HAMILTON.

S<sup>r</sup>,

26 Oct. [1677.]

I THANKE yow for letting me hear from yow. The marching of the forces from Glasgou gives great occasion to people to conjecture what the matter can be, since wee can hear nothing extraordinar of the phanaticks motions, who can hardly I thinke be so mad as to designe any insurrection, and yett I thinke strange iff the Ministers of State be so allarumed w<sup>out</sup> good ground; however it makes the caice of private cuntrey men that intends to leave peaceably, pretty difficult what to resolve on in these seaming combustions and alarums. I wish your Arch B. may att last be a good instrument in the settling off these differencis he says wold tend to the good off his Ma<sup>ties</sup> service, that things may be settled by a parliament; but I fear he is not convinced so in his former errors as to proceed in that method, and sayed so to yow, onely knoueing the respect yow may have for some off those he mentioned. . . . any further off consequence come to your knowledge, I shall expect to hear from yow, as yow shall the like from me, being, S<sup>r</sup> your very reall and affec<sup>t</sup> friend,

HAMILTON.

## 19. FROM THE DUKE OF HAMILTON.

S<sup>r</sup>,2 Jan<sup>r</sup>, 78.

I THANKE yow for letting me hear what comes to your knowledge, but I am not much allarumed w<sup>t</sup> those stories of imprissonment, and I wish that wer the worst wer intended, then I hope our inocencie wold soon relieve us. I hear the Chancelor is gone to Fife last weeke, but the particulare occasion off it, or any thing els of consequence, I have

not heard since parting; so I have onely to add the renewed assurance of my being, S<sup>r</sup>, your most affect<sup>d</sup> friend and servant,

HAMILTON.

For S<sup>r</sup> James Turner.

20. FROM ANNE DUCHESS OF HAMILTON.

19 April, 78.

I THANK you hartely for y<sup>r</sup> kindnes exprest att this time, which is suitable to many more obligations you haue put on me. I heard yesterday from my Lord; his letter was of the 11; he had not then seen his Ma<sup>ty</sup>, but had kised the Duks hand, which was by an acedent; for that night he came he went to the Duke of Monmoth, and said he did not goe straght to the King as he vsed to doe, because he heard reports that his Ma<sup>ty</sup> would not allowe of his waiting on him, and therefore desired him to aske his Ma<sup>ty</sup>; but the D. Monmoth replyed, he had spoken to the King already, and the King bid him tell my Lord he would not see him, while he knew what he had to say for his coming without ether his leaue or his counsells, who had made a proclamation to the contrary, but he would uerie quickly apoynt his Cabenet Counsell to heare him; and upon the Tufday the D. Monmoth tould my Lord to come to his lodging, and he would conduct where the counsell satt, which was to be the next day; and the King allowed my Lord to bring whom he thought fitt with him; so he touk my L. Cocheran, his brother and L<sup>t</sup> Generall Drumond. They went to see the Duches of Monmoth, and stay there while D. M. came to carry them to the place of metting, and there came the D. of Yorke; my Lord made him a low.

bow, but did not goe forward while the Duke made a signe to him, and then he went and presented the rest to him. My Lord said, he looked on itt as a good omen, that they [had] seen his Highnes, and hoped he would be att the Cabenet Counsell; the D. said, he thought not to haue ben att itt, for seeing them while the King shold, but now he thought he might; however he was not thare. Those that weer was the Chanc. the Tresurer, Duke M. the Lord Chamberland, and the 2 Secretares. My Lord spok first, and then the rest, what things has ben don amongst us; but the thing they insisted most on was, why they had contemned the Kings authority in coming without leave, to which they thought they gaue satisfying reasons. As sone as they came out, the King went in, and D. M. came afterwards, and tould my Lord, His Ma<sup>ty</sup> seemed more fauorably inclined after they had made ther report of what they had said; but the King desired, for his better information, they would put in writing, which they needed not syne, and itt shold be returned them againe without been copyed; with all D. M. tould them, if they declined itt, there would be great advantage taken; so they were resoluing to doe itt, but you may judge what losse they ar att in wanting aduice of Lawers. This is the sune of what was wreten to me; only my Lord desires friends may not be discouraged, for he hopes all shall be well, and that his next may giue more ground to expect itt; but God be blessed, euen this is better then what we weer thretened with. As for the mutiny heere yesterday, I thought itt a uerie pleasant fight to see they trobled no body heere; but when on company was gone away with their coulers, the L<sup>t</sup> Coll. and Cap. L<sup>t</sup> rod after them, and ouer touk them at Jareston wood; they capitulat the buffenes, for itt was to hardy a mater for to gentelmen to

force so many men back againe but by perswasions. L<sup>t</sup> Coll. had some men of his owne who weer prevailed on to retorne with a drummer, the rest marched away with their cullers, and beating ther drum; while they weer at this, the other company in the towne went and forced their cullers out of the place they were in, and went their way, doing rong to none, but beating ther comarods that were unwilling to goe with them; so when the comandars came in from on mutiny, they found a more displeasing on, for the company that went from this was the L<sup>t</sup> Coll. owne company, but itt was grown dark, and there was no following them. But I am tould itt will reflect on me and this place; I said I could not helpe that, but for my part I wishe all that comes may do so. I heare the regement will now gett leave to goe away; if they had done this soner, they might haue ben dismist soner; and if they had not, I beleve they shold haue stayer as long as they could haue gotten any thing. I shalle trouble you no further, but if I heare better news, you shall share. Adieu.

For Sir James Turner.

#### 21. FROM THE DUCHESS OF HAMILTON.

22 Aprell, 5 acloke.

I received y<sup>r</sup> within this houer. I haue not heard from my Lord since I wrott to you, so can giue you no further account then what you know. I doe beleue S<sup>r</sup> G. Lockhart will be att London before the Kings aduocat, who went with his Lady in coach to Yorke, and from thence is to goe in the stage coach. Sure Hatton has some other designe in coming to Glas. then what concernes the ordering the forces,

which itt seemes they haue a mind shall be continued on us as long as they can. I wonder att the great haift in bringing out the Needfdail regement. I think fume concerned in that shire might haue ben expected would haue stayed for another comand before they had done itt; but this is a time will discover who ar friends in reaety and who not. Amongst the number of the first I bid you hartly Adieu.

For Sir James Turner.

## 22. FROM THE DUCHESS OF HAMILTON.

30 Aprell, —78.

I HAVE gott no letter from my friend since that you was acquainted with, as you shall when I heare againe; but I am writen to from Edr fume of those things you mentione; but what concernes M. Atholl and E. Perth I doe not credeat; and I hope more of there assertions ar according to the rest of there way, any thing that makes for them, which, when brought to the test, may have, as other things has had, contrary effectes. That the countrie is att present so much eased is a mercy we aught to be thankfull to God for, and fure our friends has ben no ill inftrements in itt, and I trust shall still continue in there duty. By the last packett, D. L. receued a letter from the Arch B. G., shewing how well he was receued by the King, and how takeing the naritive was with His Ma<sup>ty</sup> and the Clergie of England, and how firmly the King was resoluied to adheir to his Counsell heere, and to aproue of there proceedings, as all tending to his serues, and to discourtenance D. H., and that party whom yet he had not admitted to his prefence. You may beleue this letter is even worne out with reeding;

yet I shall say no more but, for all this, they have too parts of the feare. Adieu.

For Sir James Turner.

23. [FROM THE DUCHESS OF HAMILTON.]

HONORED SIR,

I HAVE received y<sup>r</sup> with the inclosed on you needed not have returned; and that which I desired you should, was from no doubt of your care in any thing wherein our friend is concerned. Since I begun to write I have got a return of what I wrote with y<sup>r</sup>. He is verie sensible of your kindness, and has had his thoughts of what you proposed, but sees great defect . . . . . to be admitted access and ordered backe . . . . . to aske leave, will surely be denied. He intends to be in Ed<sup>r</sup> to morow night, and hopes . . . . . day free. Last post brought no considerable news. I heare those in the west that refuse the bond, or the enacting themselves, intends to goe to Ed<sup>r</sup>, rather then be imprisoned there; but itts said they will begin with the most considerable first, for which they have much reason, for . . . . . has . . . . . itts like there will be so many refusers as will doe more then fill there prisons. There is great divisions amongst them, both in Counsell and Comitie. What God may and will bring out of all these disorderly courses is only known to himselfe, to whose determinations itt will be all our duties to submitt. The inclosed is all I gott; so hartly Adieu.

For Sir James Turner.

## 24. FROM THE DUCHESS OF HAMILTON.

20 May, —78.

A LITTEL while after y<sup>r</sup> faruant went away, I receued letters from our friend of the 14 instant, which came by Mr Benerman. You will see by the inclosed in what condition our friends and selves ar in ; if you have any thing else to ad to what you have already wreten, lett me haue itt by to morow night. I hope a littell time shall produce better things, and for the present I am altogether of y<sup>r</sup> mind. So adieu.

Our friends dufe not intend to the baiths, while they see a littell further, and heere what is friends opinion heere.

Mr George Maxwell was ariued, which lett P. A. know.

For Sir James Turner, att Glasgou.

## 25. FROM THE DUCHESS OF HAMILTON.

17 June, —78.

THERE needed no appollege for not seeing me, who am not apt to mistake friends who ar so reall as I believe you ar in your professions ; but I am fory y<sup>r</sup> abfence now should be from any indisposition, and wishes what has formerly ben a remedy may proue fuccesfull still. I had letters Saturday . . . . . by S<sup>r</sup> Jo. Cun, and by the packett . . . . my lord of a later daitt ; they weer put in hope that the convention would be adjorned, and if it weer not, they weer resolued to kepe it, and I doe not heare but M. Atholl intends also to come notwithstanding of his Ladys jorny. I know no thing of L. G. D. beien in this

cuntrie, and beleues itt is att the same raitt of truth that my Lord is said to be heere, which, if safely, I should have ben glad of, for his absence att this time is discouraging to fume. I wishe the D. of L. confidence in carying votts so clearly as 5 to on in the convention, may make him take no other course to bar members fitting ; but fume of there proceider giues ground to think they will fall on fume such way ; a lettell time will now discover what is att present perplexing. Adieu.

For Sir James Turner, att Glasgow.

#### 26. FROM THE DUCHESS OF HAMILTON.

June 19, [1678.]

THIS day I haue gott letters from my Lord, dated 13, which day he touk jorny with E. Perth and S<sup>r</sup> Jo. Cocheran, and says others takes post, only M. Atholl and E. Kincarne stays. My Lord thinks to be in Ed. on Saturday ; but there is fume question what way he should come, and I should be glad to haue y<sup>r</sup> aduice. I intend to goe to Ed<sup>r</sup> to morow, where, if your helth would permitt, you ar hartely wished for. Adieu.

For Sir James Turner, att Glasgow.

#### 27. FROM THE DUCHESS OF HAMILTON.

20 June, —78.

I OPENED y<sup>n</sup> to A. T. and thereby receued y<sup>n</sup>. I wishe y<sup>r</sup> aduices be followed concerning my friend, which I shall declare is my owne opinion. I gott a letter this morning, which speakes that G. Deyell

should have gott my brothers regiment. Beien so neare goeing away, I haue not time to ade more, but M<sup>r</sup> Jo. B. will be with you to morow, and he will tell you more particularly my thoughts then att this time I can writt them. So hartely wishing you your helthe, that your friends may have y<sup>r</sup> company. Adieu.

For Sir James Turner, att Glasgow.

28. FROM SIR JAMES TURNER TO A PERSON UNKNOWN.

SIR,

I RECEAVED yo<sup>r</sup> laft from Ed<sup>r</sup>, wherein you gave me a full account of all pafd at yo<sup>r</sup> Convention of Eftates; and indeed, when I feriouf-lye confider how things were layd and prepard, and how Duke Hamilton was with fome confiderable friends at London when that Convention was called by his Ma<sup>ty</sup>, and how the elections were carried, I can not bot fay, my lord Duke, by his prudent carriage, rather gained ground then loft any; you will thinke fo, when you confider how many of thefe who had declar'd to be of his principles, had diferted him, and gone over to the other partie; and of thefe who were afhamd to doe fo, how many rather mutterd then fpoke out their thoughts. I heard before you wrote to me how the Duke had left Scotland, to feeke his health at the baths, where now I conceive he is; bot yow tell me he intends to goe to London before he returne home. Yow tell me D. Lauderdaills animofitie againft him continues, and defires my thoughts of all thefe affaires, which I fhall give yow very freelie, how wifely, judge yo<sup>r</sup> felfe.

I thinke my lord Duke of Hamilton hath the wolfe by the eares; he dare neither bite nor let goe. If he goe not to court, his enemie

will tell the king, it is out of disrespect, and perhaps out of contempt or revenge, because reason of state sufferd not his Ma<sup>ty</sup> to let the Duke kisse his hand last summer. If he goe to Court, I am affrayd he may once more meet a visage de bois, the bed chamber doore shut vpon him. Bot of tuo evils the lesse must be chosen; my lord, by his going to cast himselfe and his fortunes at the kings feet, vindicates his loyaltie to the world. If the king refuse to admit him to his presence with that affabilitie he honours some meaner persons, the Duke loofeth nothing; for soveraigne princes must be gained by obsequiousnes, bot not by resentment. Yow aske me, if the Grand favourite continue to persecute the Duke of Hamilton, what shall the Duke doe; I shall tell yow, thogh the stroke be mainlie and directlie intended against the Duke himselfe, yet by an oblique rebound it will give a sad blow to all that Illustrious family. For this reason, I humblie conceive the Duke shoud prefer his libertie to all other concernments, and rather hazard any thing then goe to prison. I apprehend no danger of that by the tender of his service to the king at Whitehall, so it be done before the fitting of the p<sup>ar</sup>liament; for his appearance at that nick will furnish Lawderdail subject to represent to the king groundles feares, needles jealousies and apprehensions, well masked with seeming reasons of state. If my lord get a reall wellcome from the king, he knows then how to take vp his measures; if it be bot a seeming and a complementall one, I wish he wold take it, and goe away with it; for the most part of men will thinke his Ma<sup>ty</sup> is reallie kind to him, and this will doe no hurt; besides, his Ma<sup>ty</sup> will have the lesse jealousie of him, being he conceaves himselfe in favour.

Bot yo<sup>r</sup> great question is, if the Duke perceave that the king hath

no kindnes for him, bot by the furrnises of his enemies entertaines jealousies of him, what he shall doe in that cace. I thinke he can doe but one of three, stay where he is in England, goe beyond seas, or come home to Scotland. I apprehend as yet no danger of any of the three. Bot he shall be a loser by doeing any of the first tuo. If he goe beyond seas, first he must be maintaine thogh Inconnu; nixt the mannagement of his estate will sensible misse him; thirdlie, the Dutcheffe will be disconsolate; fourthlie, these who stand yet for him (thogh they be fewer then they were) will fall off, and make their peace, or at least lag behind; lastlie, he diserts his owne and the countreys cause, and gives it for lost. I say still, if necessitie force him not to seeke shelter abroad, My lord Dukes stay in England (vnles he be in favour) will render him contemptible, the object of his enemies scorn, and will not save him from imprisonment, whenever it is designed or concluded. The third is onlie left, to come home, which I humbly thinke is the most honorable and safe of the three. Honorable, because he may live like himself at home, with these particular . . . . ents which arise from the pleasure he hath in his confort and children, and the conversation of these whose honor is so deare to them, that they will not bow their knee to Baall. Bot yow say the danger of imprisonment is still the same at home that it was, when the bond and lawborrous were prest, and the formidable hoste in the west. I grant yow it is so, bot the wit of man can not guard against all these euills and dangers that the wit of man can foresee. If the Duke, by his intelligence, (which I conceive is not impossible,) or by strong presumptions, see his incarceration be designed, he may make a step with good enough reasons over to Arran; he hath busines to doe

there; he may anfuere all they have to fay againft him by his proxies and Advocates; bot if that helpe not, he may without much difficultie get from Arran to fome other place of the world, and that is the laft refuge, and fould be keepd fo in referve. I cannot fancie the eftate can fuffer by his retreat, thogh . . . make him fugitive, it is none of his; and I am as fure, his honor can fuffer as litle, when armed malice and black revenge, (which know not to be limited by either juftice, reafon, law or confcience,) impofeth a neceffitie on him to fave himfelfe.

I faw the Earle of Arran at Paris, . . . . . came from his travels in Italie. I looke on him as a perfon of much honor, a fmart young lord, and one who in time may prove a very refenting enemie, which perhaps is, or may be apprehended by my lord Dukes enemies, which, peradventure, may prove a bit to refrain fome of them from offering palpable injuries both to my lord Duke, or any of his familie. . . . I am afraid yow may afke me, if mifchiefe be intended againft both father and fonne, not that E. Arran hath done any hurt, bot becaufe he may doe it, as it was faid of a Duke of Cleve, who hangd young men becaufe they might prove thieves; and vpon this account, to fave themfelves an after game, clap vp at one and the fame time both the Duke and E. Arran; what, I fay, fhall be done in that cace? Firft, I fay, that may be thought of time enough heerafter; fecondlie, I confeffe, when I thinke of the fad fate of an Earle of Douglas and his brother at the caftle of Edenburgh, and of the lord Home and his brother in the minoritie of James the fifth, I fould thinke the Duke and his fonne, if they be in one countrey, they fould be bot feldome in one houfe, till the coafte be more cleare, and the weather looke fairer; for the ones libertie may fave the other from imprifonment. I could en-

large this, bot I have said enough to one who can discant on this subject better then myselfe. Expect no news from me bot what the gazets brings yow ; whether Spaine and Holland will make peace with us heere in france or not, a litle time will discover. I pray God keepe yow.

from Havre de Grace,

11 7bris, 78.

29. FROM THE DUCHESS OF HAMILTON.

4 Nov. —78.

YOUR continued respects I receue with the fence I aught, and am altogether of your oppinion, which I beleue my Lord is now of also ; for in his last letter he forbids me to writt more to him. I did desire James should have come home before this ; but his father intending to come, thought fittest not to send him, but to bring him along with himselfe. He writts no news to me, but I heard from Ed. what you sent me, except the taking of the too last in the list, and that the Marq: Montros is to mary with the blood royall, I heard not ; it seemes this plot has ben of a long contriueance. I pray God discover all trateres, and then I am confedent we shall haue better days. So hartely farwell. My feruis to your Lady.

For Sir James Turner, att Glasgou.

30. FROM ANDREW TOFTES.

RIGHT WORSHIPFUL,

Hamilton 10 Febr<sup>y</sup> 1679.

MR SMITH did leave these books with a manuscript with me, but

forbad me to fend them till he wrot from Ed<sup>r</sup> to me, which he hes never yet done; but, since you seem to need them, receive them from the bearer. I have no newes but what are none to yow, that is, touching the tuo Brothers Regiments, and themselves, to come in place of E. Linlithgow and E. Marr their Reg<sup>ts</sup>. I have nothing of certainty; but only it is someq<sup>t</sup> probable, if it be not stopt by the Councell. Whether my Lord be yet come off or not, we cannot tell, but we expect to hear to-morrow or Wednesday; but her Grace thinks he may be on his journey, for her laft letters bore his resolution of coming o . . . . . instant. E. Kincarden comes with him. I . . . . . the condition that becomes me as, Right Worshipfull, your most obliged, faithfull, humble serv<sup>t</sup>

ANDREW TOFTES.

For Sir James Turner at Gorbells.

31. FROM THE DUKE OF HAMILTON.

S<sup>r</sup>,

4 March [1679.]

I AM very fory to hear of your indisposition, and wishes yow your health with all my heart, and shall be glade to see yow here so soon as yow are able. I do regraite the hard measure the Bishop of Ed<sup>r</sup> meets with as much as any; and I beleive all the concernment that S<sup>t</sup> Andrews has for it is the preprative; but I will say no more till meeting, who am, S<sup>r</sup>, your affect<sup>d</sup> friend and servant,

HAMILTON.

For Sir James Turner.

## 32. FROM ANDREW TOFTES.

Hamilton March 4 1679.

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL,

I DELIVERED yours to his Grace; you have my Lords answer inclosed. I have never yet had one syllable from Mr Smith ordering the delivery of your papers; but I am glade they came safe to your hands, and that I sent them that day with your man. We have some rumours here, not without probable grounds, of their Grace going for England in May, or about that time; for other newes I know none. I am very much grieved to hear of your being ill; I pray God send yow health, and it shall be desired by none with more ardor then, Right Worshopfull, your most obliged faithfull humble serv<sup>t</sup>

ANDREW TOFTES.

For Sir James Turner at Gorbells.

## 33. FROM THE DUKE OF HAMILTON.

5 Feb<sup>r</sup> [1680.]

I RECEIVED yours, and thanks you kindly for the trouble you have been at in speaking to the Principall and Regents concerning my sons, to whom I thought it unnecessary to write to, since I am resolved to be there myself w<sup>i</sup>n a little after the Duke goes from this, who waits onely now for the yaghts; for I intend to go from this to Kinneell, and . . Glasgow to Hamilton. I am fory your ouen affaire had no better success, but I confes I expected no better for you, as affairs still continue;

when I can contribute any thing to your advantage, you may be assured of the indevores of your most affect friend & servant,

HAMILTON.

34. FROM THE LORD ROSS.

HONNORED SIR,

Halkhead the 14. Jan<sup>r</sup> 1682.

I HAVE just now receaved ane order from the General for sending Captaine Stewarts troupe of Dragouns to Dounce, wher they are to quarter; I shall therefore desyre ye will order them to march from ther presnt quarters, on Munday the fixteine instant, to the toune of Dounce, wher they are to quarter till further order. I doubt not but ye have heard of the late infollence committed in the toune of Lenerk one Wednesday last. Be pleasd to cause dispatch the incloseit to the Generall by a dragoune soe soon as is possible. Since thes Rebels are begining to apear oppenly againe, I desyre ye will cause yo<sup>r</sup> Dragouns be in as good a readynes as is possible; and I think it wer not amifs to send some tomorrow the length of Lenerk, to know the certainty of this. Sir, I am yo<sup>r</sup> most humble servant,

ROSSE.

For Sir James Turner, These.

35. FROM THE LORD ROSS.

HONNORED SIR,

Glasgow the 22 Jan<sup>r</sup> 1682.

I SEND you heare a nott of the names of some of thes who are said to haue been at the late buffines at Lenerk. I desyre, therefore, that ye

will fend a partie of Dragouns to aprehend them if it be poffible. I ame told that your Livtenant knows moft of them who lives in the paroch of Cather. This lift was fent me from Lenerk by Major Whyt; whoe adds, that at parting he receaved exprefs comand from his Royall Highnes to keepe corefpondence with me for that effect. I hope ye will order fwch perfons to goe wpon this partie as will be fitteft; and whoe, by ther deligence, will inable ws to give a good account of our care and conferne for the Kings fervice. I wold have the partie to goe to the places firft which are neareft to this, and I wifh them good fucces. I am yo' moft humble fervant,

ROSSE.

For Sir James Turner, Thefe.

[*On a flipe enclosed in the Original.*]

Grays of Cryftie, in the paroch of Cather, about five mylls from Glasgow.

John Rwfball of eaft feild,

George Hill in Cather crooks,

Watbell in Midowbuckle,

} thes 3 lives in the new paroch of Munklan.

John Watbell in Badfhaw of Lauchope.

Gavine Hamilton, whos mother lived latly wnder the Laird of Dalyell, at the Baronfhall, near to the Kirk of Dalyell.

### 36. FROM THE LORD ROSS.

HONNORED SIR,

Halkhead the 26 Jan'. 1682.

I THINKE it no great wonder that two troupes fhould be foe ill accommedat in the toun of Lenerk, when I remember what deficulty

we hade to gett intertainment for a much fewer number when I was laft ther ; but it feems they have order to mew themselves within the narrow confyns of that pitifull litle place, ells I cannot beleive they wold willingly reduce themselves to fuch ftraits, as innevitably they moft undergoe, if the hors and dragouns fall not be allowed to qwar-ter in the countrie about. Major Whit never fignified any thing of ther deftres, foe that I was altogether ignorant of it till I hade it from yow. I remember the Generall fhew me that he did aprehend ther was a defigne that Claveres fhould come waft, but I found him wery avers to it. As for Lieutenant Lawders informatione anent James Gray, I fhall fay nothing of it till I retorne to Glasgou ; ffor the things taken from the Rebels, I mak not the leaft doubt of ther being prys. And I think it but a fmall gratification to give the ferjeant that litle mear, in confideratione of his los. I doe fupofs that both Rufsall and Hamiltone wer declared fwgitives by the Circwit court which fatt laft at Glasgou. Againft Munday, I fhall give yow a mor certaine account, haveing fent to Edinburgh this laft week for the letters of denunciatione. I am yo' moft humble fervant,

For Sir James Turner Thes.

ROSSE.

### 37. FROM THE LORD ROSS.

HONNORED SIR,

Halkhead the 10 of feeb' 1682.

I H A W E received the bound which ye fent me for thes two prifoners apeirance ; I hawe lykewyfe this day taken bound for the four prifoners browght in from Lochenoch ; for when I had examined that matter as ftrickly as I could (heir in the country,) I could find no ground for

apprehending of them ; foe that I beleive the charactor ye give of the comander of that pairty is jwft enowgh. If mafter Kenavay reftore not thes two horfes, which he has no pretence to keep, I think the pairtie owght to be recalled. I fent yow home yefterday two of yo' dragouns who wer of M' Kenavays pairtie ; I know not give they came to yow, but this was the occafione. They hade qwartered wpon fome perfons in Ranfrew, by ane order from the provoft, becaufe the perfones hade refused to pay a fubfidie impofed by the provoft in ane arbitrary way, without the leaft forme or collor either of law or juftice, wpon which I commanded them back to ther qvarters ; and really this ought not to pas wnpunifhed, for it will oppen the mouthes of difafected people to fay, ther is nothing intended but ane arbitrary gowernment, then which, I am fure, nothing is mor fals ; one of the two whoe was qwartering at Ranfrew, his name is John Ros, a perfone whofe late mifcarriages in Captaine Hay his company might hawe tawght him mor circomfpectione. I fhall not be ane ill inftrument with the Archbifhope to doe any fawor he thinks fitt, tho few of thes gentlemen have deferved it at his hands. I defyre ye will order one of yo' dragouns to cary the inclofed to the Generall, and to delyver the other to the Juftice-clarke. I am yo' moft humble fervant,

To Sir James Turner Thes.

ROSSE.

### 38. FROM THE LORD ROSS.

HONNORED SIR,

Halkhead the 16 day of feb' 82.

I BELEIVE the badnes of the way was the caufe yo' dragoune returned not fooner. The Generall gave me nottice that he wold recall

maſter Kanavays partie, befyds which, he ſignified nothing els to me, exept a comand from the Duke to come in, if it wer poſſible for me ; which indeid at preſent it is not. As for Muray, yo' other dragoune, I am ſatiſfied he be pardoned. I have given two letters to the bearer, the one to the Generall, and the other to the Treafurer-deput. I deſyre ye wold ſend them eaſt with one of yo' dragouns, whoe will be care-  
fwll to delyver them. I am, yo' moſt humble ſervant,

For Sir James Turner Theſ.

ROSSE.

### 39. FROM THE LORD ROSS.

HONNORED SIR,

Halkhead the 6 day of March 82.

JOHN CRIGHTONE, my enſigne, cane teſtifie and ſhow it wnder my hand to him, q'in I told him that I was ſure ye did not know that fellow did belong to me when ye ingadged him, ſoe far I was from in-  
tertaineing any miſaprehenſions of yow therein ; nor indeid cane I ex-  
pect any thing of that nature from any body conſerned for the Dutch officers, ſeing I wold willingly doe every thing that might oblidge any of them, and particularly Captaine Dalyell. As for that fellow Blackburne, the reaſone why I putt him in priſone was, becauſe he declaired he could ſerve no longer in my company ; and I am ſure, wer he at liberty, he wold run away befor to morrow, and that is the reaſone why I ſtill detaine him ther. I am yo' moſt humble ſervant,

For Sir James Turner Theſ.

ROSSE.

## 40. FROM THE LORD ROSS.

HONNORED SIR,

Halkhead the 8 March 1682.

I HAWE receaved a letter from the Generall, daited one munday, wherin he shows me his Royall highnes gave order that all the foott at Lenerk should come to Glasgou ; and I hawe accordingly sent order to Glasgou for taking wpe quarters for all the four companyes. Captaine Hay will give yow a letter directed to Major Whit, q<sup>th</sup> I hade dispatched before I receaved yo<sup>r</sup> ; when it coms to yo<sup>r</sup> hands, I defyre ye will cause send it to Lenerk. As for that fellow ye wreat of, I hope ye will excuse me when I tell yow that I hawe refused him to my brother-in-law, Captaine Ramfey. Sir, I am yo<sup>r</sup> most humble fervant,

ROSSE.

For Sir James Turner. Thes.

## 41. FROM THE LORD ROSS.

HONNORED SIR,

Halkhead the 11 March 1682.

It was folly the confideratione of yo<sup>r</sup> dragouns advantage which made me foe wnwilling to remove them out of the paroch of Govan ; for I know not that place in this country wher either they cane ly foe contiguous, ore be foe well provyded in hors meat, which is a great confideratione this scairs year ; and, in my oppinione, the first is noe less at such a tyme, qwhen the barbarous rebels are cnocking doune thos who serue the king in every corner ; but since ye are foe defyrous to haw yo<sup>r</sup> dragouns removed, I am fatisfied that ye quarter them in the

paroches of Cathcart, Carmanock, and Rutherglen. I am wnvilling to qwarter wpon the barronrie, the Archbifhope being from home ; but I think they wold hawe been better qwartered in the paroch of Eaſter Kilpatrick, and places ajacant, then wher they are goeing, becauſe noe body hath been qwartered ther of a longe tyme. I am yo' moſt humble ſervant,

Rosse.

For Sir James Turner. Theſ.

## 42. FROM JAMES EARL OF ARRAN.

SIR,

Ham. March 21 1682.

I HAVE been ſoe often oblidge to yow that I have noe reaſon to dout of your affection, and aſſiſtance to what relaits to my concernes, which makes me croſſe yow with this franckneſſe ; for tho I know yow hav had ſeverall officers meaking recrutes amongeſt yow alreadie, and ſoe it will be the hearder taſk now ; yet, for old aqwantance ſaik, I will deſir your aſſiſtance for ſome men that I ame leavieng for my oun particular. I intend to be with yow upon thurſday, but thought my giving yow this advertiſment could doe [no] hurt, ſince at the ſaim tyme it is to aſſure yow, that I ame your faithfull freind and ſervant,

For Sir James Turner, at Glaſgow.

ARRAN.

## 43. FROM THE EARL OF ARRAN.

SIR,

Ham. March 22 1682.

I HAVE juſt now received yours, and am aſhaimed I did not thank yow yeſterday for the letter I had at my arrivall. I ame ſorie that

yow are indisposed, but I thank God I ame not, and as longe as I have health, I think it is the best tyme I can emploie to visit my freinds ; foe I shall not faill sieng yow, and affur yow that I ame your affectionat freind and fervant,

ARAN.

For Sir James Turner, at Glasgou.

#### 44. FROM THE LORD ROSS.

HONNORED SIR,

Halkhead the 25 March 1682.

I AM of yo<sup>r</sup> opinione, that Orbestoune might haw fatisfied himself with apprehending fuch of his oune tenants as wer gultie of the late rebellion, and yet this discowerie wold hawe done better hade it been made a twelve moneth agoe ; which certainly I think might hawe been done as well then as now. Ther is noe body, I am certaine, less ambitious of command then my self. But yow may remember what orders the Generall was pleased to lay wpon me before yo<sup>r</sup> self ; and therfor, wnless I know how they are disposed, I cane give him noe account of my deligence : And wpon the other hand, ye know I was always ready to comply with every motion ye were pleased to make relateing to yo<sup>r</sup> dragouns : Soe that I am sure my comands could not be very burthenfome. In the meine tyme, I doe asure yow I shall be farr from taking nottice of what is past, our great buffines being to serve the King faithfully, and not to scrow wpe our animosities and peiks one against another. I am, Sir, yo<sup>r</sup> most humble fervant,

For Sir James Turner. Thes.

ROSSE.

## 45. FROM THE EARL OF ARRAN.

Hamilton March 27 1682.

I HAVE had yours, and since my last one from Orbistoun, wherine he seames mightilie surprized with my sever letter; for he tells me ther is not one of thos men that he had seazed on that he could not prove such crimes againest them, and espetialie that man of My Lord Dundonalds, who, he faves, was til of lait one of his own tenantes, and that most of thes he took wer most of them rogges that lived under himself, and that he would meak out such thinges against them, that they would willinglie goe anie where reather then byde the fence of the law. His beinge soe possitive, has hindred me from writting to my Lord Dundonald, till I spiek with him self, who I expect heer this night, and yow shall be enformed of what passeth. He tels me too ther wer two men that Houston had given me, and one that Bishoptoun had done the like with, and your sargent had sett all at libertie. I hope Orbistoun will wait upon yow, and give yow a particular account himself, of the reasones why he took thos men; at lieast if he dont doe itt as he comes upp, I shall meak him wait one yow when he comes from hence, and when you are togither you cane agrie what is best to bee done. I dont think it fitt for me to writt to the Generall till wee see what is represented, and then I shall not fail to doe what you shall think most convenient. I hear ther is one Thomas Kennway, that rides in the gward, that goes upp and down thes countries about Glasgow, to find out thos that has been accefforie or actualie in the last rebellions. I beleive if he be dealt with, he may furnish some

men easilie, which I begge yow would doe if he be off your acqwantage. I heare ther are juft now some men arrived from Glasgow, which meakes me ftop my letter till I know what they are, that I may give yow ane account of them now. My Major is come in, and has brought 13 men alongeft with him. I have noe more to adde, but that I hope in a litle tyme I may, in fpytt of ill fortune, meak upp the number I propoffe to my felf. I am your faithfull humble fervant,

ARAN.

For Sir James Turner.

46. FROM THE EARL OF ARRAN.

Hamilton March 28 1682.

I BEGGE yow a thoufand pardons for detaining your fervant foe long, but juft as I received yours, I was getting a horfback to taik the aire, which has hindred my writting till now. I find Orbiftoune continewes to fay, that thos men he had taiken, he could prove againft all of them, that they wer in the lait rebellion, ore what would come within the acte of Parliament, which reaches the fecuring of vagabons and villans; and he faves ther wer 12 of thos men his own, and that I might be feur he would not, for his own faik, fecure anie men but thos that he might be warranted to doe by law, and that the affiftance he had from yow was what he hopes yow wont be qwestioned for, when he comes to be examined what men they were he had feazed upon; and fince he came heer, I fee he has bein thraitned, by fom of thos men that wer fett at libertie, to have his hous burnt, as the Laird of Barochan, who was accidentily with him when he was upon that expedi-

tion, has had his hous, as I ame informed. For all this I intend to writt to my Lord Dundonald tomorrow, and follow anie thing yow think fitt to adviffe me, which is all I have to adde at present, but that I ame your faithfull humble servant,

ARAN.

For Sir James Turner.

47. FROM THE EARL OF ARRAN.

Hamilton March 29 1682.

I AME forie yow shoud haue given yourself the trouble of sending your fergant or your corporall, since yow may be seur what ever yow say is of more weght with me then that yow nead have taiken this paines of convincing mee. Yow know I ame ignorant of what are the concernes of thos men but as I ame informed, and for my pairt, I will look noe more after them; I wish I had neaver meddeled with anie of them, since yow rune anie risque to be blaimed for what yow have done; tho I ame confident, when yow are heard, you'l meet with a very gentill reprooff, if anie. I shall not fail to writt to my Lord Dundonald, and tell him that he might be assured what ever man of his had been offred me, I would neaver have accepted him if he did not think it fitting, and that I ame sorrie Orbiftoun had seazed on any of his tenants. Orbiftoun tells me that he is resolved to seaze on thos that are his oun men, againe to bring them to justice; tho for my pairt I caire for none of them, since it has maid such a clamour in the contrie, which does my leavies ten tymes more hurt then twice the number of men could doe me good. I ame forie yow euse the exprefion of being baiten with double rodes. Yow may be seur, as to what

relaits to my pairt, I ame not capable of thinking yow are in the leaft in the wrong, and I hope thos yow nead to cair for will be off my opinion ; but I think y<sup>e</sup> beft will be to let the thing fall to y<sup>e</sup> ground. I have had three or four voluntires from Ruglen, and I have ingaged one man more, who received my monie voluntarlie, and now refufes to goe ; I think ther can be noe hurt in taiking fuch a man as that. His naine is John Fairey. I fent down one that took one with me to fee if he could gett anie of his comerades ; foe this John Faire received my earneft from the handes of one David Scott, befor feveral wittneffes, but now refufes to goe ; foe if yow dont think it [may] bring yow into new trowble, I fhould defir yow would caus fome of thos of your dragowns that ftay in the place bring him to me. I have noe more to add to this, but that I ame your faithfull humble fervant,

For Sir James Turner.

ARRAN.

48. FROM THE EARL OF ARRAN.

Saturday, 4 aclock.

I HAVE juft now had yours, but I am informed that that Fairie which was taiken one by David Scott, is a luftie young fellow, and that he who yow talk of is a younger brother ; how ever, I fhall doe what yow will advis me, but I had foe manie that have taikin my monie and cheated me, that I ame loth to truft anie more. Ther is one George Baxter too in Ruglen, who I have bein extraordinary kind too. He came a voluntir, and upon that account I was much kinder then to y<sup>e</sup> others ; but now he has taiken my monie thes 8 or ten dayes, and abfents him felf ; foe if under the pretext of fhairching for the

other, they can fall upon him, I shall think it is a good change. To sho how litle I presse people, ther came hither a boye to taik one, and nixt day his master came from Glasgou to tell me he was his apprentiff, and had rune away upon some debait that aroffe betuixt him and some of his other servants; immediatly I restored the young man, and told him I would protect noe bodies servants against ther maisters. I had severall officers with me yesterday, but Cap: Inis was not amongest them, nor did I gett soe much as one man. I have now one Captan Cuningham with yow, and if anie of my friends have any resolutions of letting me have anie more men, I should be glad they would send them upp with him. I should be glad to know what I might hope for. I ame joust now goeing out to meet my father, who, wee fancie will be heer this night. I have so bad a pen, and ame in so much haift, that I belive you'l heardlie be aible to reed this. I ame your faithful freind and servant,

ARAN.

For Sir James Turner.

## 49. FROM SIR THOMAS LIVINGSTONE.

SIR,

Lieth 11 April [1682.]

THE dragoene who you have been plaesed to sent with a letter, telling me ther is fix men by the way for my Lord Arans regiment, came to me this morning. It is onpossible for me to meet the men my self, but schall send an officer, in regard we ar to part to morro, and I have saeveral bufines. In the maen tyme I schal not fael to acquent my Lord Aran of your kyndnes, and remain your most humble fervent,

For Major Turnare att Glaskoue Thes.

T. LEVINGSTONE.

## 50. FROM SIR THOMAS LIVINGSTONE.

SIR,

SINCE my last your dragouns did come heer, bringing along with them fyve men; as for that gentelman Robifone, I schal not fael to recomend him to my Lord Aran, and for my particular, any kyndnes I ame capabel he schal dispoſe of. In the maen tyme, if you plaefe lye any comands upon me to the plaefe wheer I ame going, ther schal bee no man moor redden to ſcho hoe much I ame your moſt humble and obedient ſervent,

T. LIVINGSTONE.

For Major Turner at Glasco.

## 51. FROM THE LORD ROSS.

HONNORED SIR,

Halkhead the 13 Aprill 1682.

I AM really ſoe wnderſpoſed ſtill that I am not able to goe about buſines as formerly; therefore, (till it pleas God) that I recover my health, I ſhall deſyre that ye will qwarter yo<sup>r</sup> dragounes in the moſt convenient pleaſes ye think fitt, which I ſhall aprow off; I deſyre lykwyſe ye will wreat to Captaine Ingliſh, and ſhow him that I have ane order from the Generall to call ane counſell of warr betwixt his Enſigne Lewies Lawder and ane tenant of the Earle of Lowdons; if Lawder find himſelf in the wronge, I wiſh he may take ſome cours to take it away, and I ſhall give him all the tyme I can poſibly for doeing of it. In the meane tyme I wiſh he would ſend me a trew account of the wholl affaire. I am ſory to heir that yo<sup>r</sup> gutt hath twrned from ill to worſe;

fo soone as I am able I hope to see yow. I am your most humble  
servant,

For Sir James Turner.

ROSSE.

52. FROM THE LORD ROSS.

HONNORED SIR,

Halkhead the 15 Aprill 1682.

I AM very glade that Ensigne Lawder is come wpe to Glasgou ; I  
am very desyrous to speak with him ; if ye thinke fitt to fend him hi-  
ther, wpone Munday about two a clock in the afternoone, ore any  
other of the dragouns whoe wer conferved in that affaire, for I am  
very desyrous to doe them all the right I cane. I wish they may make  
the bufiness as clear as is pofible ; which, efter I hawe spoken with  
them, I will endeavo' to airt them as right (to mak ther oune pairt  
faire) as I can, for I am a litle conferved to haw them com hanfomly  
off in that, if it be pofible. Loudounes officer, called Campbell, was  
with me, desyring a continvacione of the counsell of warr till the eigh-  
teine of May, which I made him give me wnder his hand as his oune  
desyre, but I gave him no assurance to delay it for ane hour. Now, if  
Ensigne Lawder find it more convenient to continowe it till that dyet,  
ore to hawe it cald mor sumarly, I cane doe either of them he finds  
most convenient.

Since I am to speak with the persons whoe wer actors in that bufi-  
ness, I will certainly receive a more clear informatione from them then  
Captaine Inglish is able to wreat ; and therefor I haw returned yow  
back his letter. Sir, I am your most humble servant,

For Sir James Turner These.

ROSSE.

## 53. FROM THE EARL OF ARRAN.

Ham. Ap: 19 1682.

I HAD yours of the 18 this morning, and has spoken to Orbistoun about that man Longe. He has promised me to talk to the father, who he sayes he can governe as he pleases; and more then that, if the son should insist, he can meak out such things against him that will taik his life if he should persew him, ore in the leaist revive this affaire. I have had noe letters yett from E<sup>d</sup>. so can tell you nothing about the men, onlie I desir you would taik one noe more, nor put your self to further trouble, which is all at present from your faithfull freind and servant,

ARRAN.

For Sir James Turner.

## 54. FROM SIR JAMES TURNER TO THE EARL OF ARRAN.

MY NOBLE LORD,

21st April 1682.

I SHALL waite vpon yo<sup>r</sup> lop<sup>s</sup> direction concerning these men I levied for y<sup>r</sup> lo<sup>p</sup>, and shall meddle no more, hopeing yow will need no more; and if the French king be well naturd, it is probable the Estates of the Vnited Provinces will be more readie to disband then raise more forces. I beseech yo<sup>r</sup> lo<sup>p</sup> let me know if I shall take these drops with cherrie sacke in the morning, and how long I shall fast after. Bot the maine errand of this letter is to shew yo<sup>r</sup> lo<sup>p</sup>, that the other day I was told by a friende, that it is certaine that the Deane of Glasgou, now minifter at Hamilton, did of himselfe, without any previous desire of

the Archbishop, promise to him not to nominate Doctor Birsbine or Mr William Blaire to be his assessors when he was rector; and yet, notwithstanding his promise, nominated them both. I am sorry one who had the generall reputation of an honest man, should have done any thing like a prevarication; but that which troubled me most was, that it is said, your lo<sup>p</sup> invited and prompted the Deane to doe so. Your lo<sup>p</sup> knows what yow owe to that order re-established by law, which yow know his Ma<sup>tie</sup> owes so much, nor needs any man tell yow what respect is due to an Archbishop whom his Ma<sup>tie</sup> hath made the third person of this kingdom, whose authoritie was trampled on by the more than magisteriall masters of our universitie, particularlie these two I just now mentioned; and I thinke not onlie the Episcopall order, but the royall power, was wounded through his fides. How much it may concerne yo<sup>r</sup> lo<sup>p</sup> to reverence that function, and these who are in it, no bodie needs informe the Earle of Arran. And for these two men, I beleieve yo<sup>r</sup> lo<sup>p</sup> had reason to expect more service to your selfe and noble familie from 2 lackeys, than from them both. However, the Deane hath demitted, and Mr Waddell is chosen Rector, who hath nominated none of these two gentlemen to be his assessors. I am sorry to learn that the phisitians have yesterday told my Lord Ross, that the malignitie of his maladie is above their cure, though not their skill. I am, etc.

Gorbells, 21 Aprile, at night.

## 55. FROM WILLIAM MASTER OF ROSS.

SIR,

Halkhead Aprill 25.

I RECEAVED yours, and according to your comands delivered the inclofed to my father, who begs your pardon he was not able to writ to you, but orders me to shew you he is very uel fatisfied with what the general writs to you ; he is extraordinarily much better than he was some days befor this and I hop is nou in the way of recovery. I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

W. ROSSE.

For Sir James Turner.

## 56. FROM THE EARL OF ARRAN.

Thursday y<sup>e</sup> 4 of May 7 at night.

SINCE the last tyme I troubled yow, I have received a letter from Collo: Douglas, telling that he will receive my men ; his ship is lieng in Leith Road. I told him I had twelve men, for I thought Orbifton had had eight. He desired I may caus imbark 6 men in John Burnfydes ship, and 6 in Robert Dumbars ; they are both leing together. I had a letter yesterday from Orbifton, telling me he would deliver what men he had to Cap. Douglas, who had promised to caus convoy them to the shoar. I wish yow would enquir what men he has received, and lett me know ther names, together with the 4 yow have, and the 2 my Lo: Semple promised mee. Collo: Douglas tells me the people are verie rude to the officers that embark the men, so desires me to gett some discreiet man to taik caire of thos that are sent ; but I think yow may

talk with Cap: Douglas, and fend the men with thos Orbifton has delivered to him. I'l fwar I ame so afhaimed to eusse thiſ freedom with yow, that wer itt not that I know you'l forgive me, I ſhould neaver have euſed yow with this freedom. I had letters by the laſt poſt that tels me the Duk was then reſolved to com off one the 5, which, if the nixt poſt confirms, I wil imediatly goe to Ed<sup>r</sup> ; but, as yett, I have taiken noe other reſolution. So I ame your faithfull freind and ſervant,

ARRAN.

57. FROM THE EARL OF ARRAN.

Ham. May 6 1682.

I HAVE juſt now had yours, and imediately begune my letter, that your ſervant may be with yow in all haifte. I confeſſe I ame mor and more amaized at Orbiftouns cariadge. I think Cap: Douglas is extreamlie in the right ; nor did I my ſelf ever underſtand that he ſhould be putt to further trouble, than when they were brought to him, to help them forward with a gwaird, which Orbiftoun writt to mee he had ingaged to doe, ſince he was to fend in ſome men however to Coll: Douglas, for his euſſe ; ſo I thought it would be all one trouble to carie in a few more, which maid me think of troubling Cap: Douglas. I am afrayed, if the wind comes butt a litle more futhward, the ſhipes will be ſayled befor the men gett thither ; however, it is but venturing the jurnie. I doe heer fend yow a letter to the maſters of the two ſhipes, according to your deſir, to receave what men Duncan Grant delivers for my euſſe ; but I wiſhe they may be put aboard Collo: Douglas, tho I dont know particularlie which is his ; and ſo ſoon as I

hear that y<sup>e</sup> men are dispatched, I shall writt to Collo: Douglas. I wish I knew the possitive number, for if they be but 7, I think it wer best to send them aboard Douglas ship; but becaus I told him in my last I had a duzen of men, he desired I might send 6 aboard Lif: Collo: Buchan, and the other 6 aboard his ship; but if ther be but one mor then the half, I think it best not to seperat them. I hope yow have not given my aqwittance to Baxters wife, since she tels so foolish a storie for her husband, and I meak noe dout to gett him mead wearie of his life heer. But since the town of Ruglen ingaged to furnish that man, I don't see why they should not meak good ther word. I doe assure yow, if I had thought you had had so bad a memorie, I had neaver put yow to this trouble; but I thought in comoradship one might be assitant to ane other upon such occasions as this, but not at the raite yow have eiffed me, for it has put yow to too much trouble, and more coast then is fitt to meak a compliment off; which is all at present from your faithfull friend and servant,

ARAN.

58. FROM THE LORD SEMPILL.

S<sup>r</sup>,

Castle Sempill, May 6th 1682.

I RECD yo<sup>r</sup>, and as to those men concerning which yow writ, I kept them soe longe untill I did despair of yo<sup>r</sup> sending for them, while att length there freinds gave boand and caution for them, and now they are att there liberty, for that it can hardly bee expected that they will promise willingness to goe, which is all at present from, S<sup>r</sup>, yo<sup>r</sup> very humble servant,

SEMPILL.

For S<sup>r</sup> James Turner

att Gorbells These.

## 59. FROM THE EARL OF ARRAN.

Ed'. May 11 1682.

I HAVE bein in such a hurrie ever since I came, that I could not dispathe your dragoun sooner, which I hope yow will pardon. I was in good hopes to have found yow heer at my arivall yesterday. I think of goeing allong with the Duk, or to follow him verie suddenie, the Duk goes from hence on Monday or tuesday, which is all at present from your faithfull freind and fervant,

ARAN.

For Sir James Turner.

## 60. FROM THE EARL OF ARRAN.

Ed: May 19 1682.

I HAD yours yesterday, and was extreamlie surprized when yow told me what yow apprehended was like to befall yow. I assure yow, without meaking anie kind of compliment, I am soe much concerned in whatever relates to yow, that yow may assure yourself that I will follow anie method yow can propose to doe yow service; but till what yow told me yourself, I had never heard anie thing of itt, nor could I almost believe it when yow wrott itt. I think yett such measures may be taken that yow will hear noe more of it neither; for according to that skeme that was proposed, and some other changes to attend itt, I heer nothing is like to follow. I goe over to Fife to morrow, and shall be back again the middle of the next week, and then I intend to begin my journie for London; soe if yow have anie commandes for me, I should be glad to have them by that tyme. You may be assured of all the freindship my father can show yow, and intirly command your most assured freind and fervant,

ARAN.

For Sir James Turner, att Glasgow.

## 61. FROM THE EARL OF ARRAN.

Friday, past 7 in the afternoon.

I HAVE juft now had that which yow wrott at twelve, and ame extreamlie oblidge to yow for the inclofed yow fent me, but I find I have moft of them in my liftes. I ame affrayed they are all fled fince I came into this contrie, for I ame a great bogle amongeft them. I think yow took the beft courfe in putting them in to Glasgowe toboth, and I meak noe dout, when the Generall knowes they are people that are difturberes of the peace of the contrie, tho it would be heard to meak out particulars againft them, yett ther being fent off the contrie I think were noe ill fervice both to the King and the Governement. I hope my Lord Roffe will be of the faine oppinion. I ame feur nothing in the world could afflict me more then that yow fhould in the lieft be found fault with upon my account, but I hope yow are in noe danger; but now I muft begge to know how I fhall beftur my felf to gett thos men that are in the tolboth, and the others that the other pairtie will bring alongeft with them. I intend both Orbiftown and my Major fhall come and wait on yow to ask your advice, and I hope yow will fpur the officers, that gave me a great mainie fair promiffes laft night to be as good as ther wordes. I fhall add noe more, but impatiently expect what will be the event [of] our endeavours, and affure yow that I ame extreamlie fenfible of your kindneffe, and fhall ever be your faithful friend and fervant,

ARRAN.

For Sir James Turner.

---



1

1



Thorp, Col. 263 - 1949



106 6d [85c]  
Stockholm, 1948  
Antonia et Hodierna  
edit.



941.06  
T 942

<p>STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES STANFORD AUXILIARY LIBRARY STANFORD, CALIFORNIA 94305-6004 (415) 723-9201 All books may be recalled after 7 days</p> <p>DATE DUE</p>	
<p>JUL 15 1998 JUL 2 1998 DEC 21 1999 DEC 15 1999 DEC 15 1999</p>	<p>2.C.C.</p>

